

2. 15. 06.

*Library of the Theological Seminary,*  
PRINCETON, N. J.

---

Purchased by the Hamill Missionary Fund.

---

BV 3500 .N3 1905  
Naylor, William S. 1864-  
... Daybreak in the Dark  
continent















MESSENGERS OF THE GOSPEL OF LIGHT

BISHOP SAMUEL A. CROWTHER, NIGER TERRITORY

KING KHAMA, BECHUANALAND

PAUL, THE APOSTLE OF THE CONGO

THE YOUNG PEOPLE'S MISSIONARY MOVEMENT

Dark Clouds

Dark Clouds

W. H. S. S. S. S.

W. H. S. S. S. S.



Young People's Missionary Movement  
New York.



The Forward Mission Study Courses

EDITED UNDER THE AUSPICES OF  
THE YOUNG PEOPLE'S MISSIONARY MOVEMENT

# Daybreak in the Dark Continent

By

WILSON S. NAYLOR

Beach Professor of Biblical Literature  
Lawrence University



Young People's Missionary Movement  
New York

Copyright, 1905, by  
THE YOUNG PEOPLE'S MISSIONARY MOVEMENT



To

THE AFRICANS

WHO AFTER NINETEEN CHRISTIAN CENTURIES

ARE STILL WITHOUT HOPE AND

WITHOUT GOD

IN THE WORLD,

AND TO THE

MEN AND WOMEN

WHO, OBEYING THE GREAT COMMISSION,

WILL IN THIS TWENTIETH CENTURY

BEAR TO THEM

THE GOSPEL MESSAGE.



## INTRODUCTORY NOTE

ONE of the great features of the missionary revival, with which the new century opens, is the determination that the Church shall study, seriously and systematically, the countries and peoples where and among whom missions are to be maintained, and the methods best adapted to evangelize them. Forms of government, racial peculiarities, religious beliefs, degrees of intelligence, and many other factors are to be considered, not only in the judging of a people, but also in the plans proposed for their improvement. The more intelligent the Church becomes concerning all mission fields—their environment, difficulties, methods, discouragements, and results—the more surely will conscientious and systematic giving increase, and the more certainly will the higher life of service among God's people be advanced.

The title of this book, *DAYBREAK IN THE DARK CONTINENT*, is suggestive of the present conditions in Africa. Many wonderful

things have come to pass in these first hours of God's day for Africa. Exploration has done its principal work as to the main features of the continent, and now the details are being rapidly completed. Medical science is mastering the causes and remedies of malarial diseases. Every phase of industrial activity is advancing rapidly. International diplomacy has practically completed the blocking out of continental colonial empires. The native blacks are being tested as linguists, teachers, men of business, laborers, and Christians, and are proving that they have great capabilities for success when properly understood and assisted. Christian missions are everywhere being recognized as powerful, permanent and necessary factors in the uplift of the people. Marvelous results in so brief a time! Still, in the presence of what remains to be done, they are only the first rays in the eastern sky, heralding the coming day.

The author is exceptionally well qualified to write on Africa. In addition to extended previous and subsequent research, he spent a year, as my traveling companion, diligently studying at first hand (on both coasts and in widely separated sections)

the continent and its people. He has the heart of a missionary, he is without racial prejudices, and were it not for clearly providential reasons, he would now be with me on his way to give his life to that foreign field. That he has done his work well I feel quite sure will be the opinion of all who read and study these pages. The marvel is that so many panoramic and yet intelligent views of great events, unsolved problems, and historic movements, so much information on so many questions as to races, customs, politics, and missionary outlook, could have been grouped in so few pages. One of the chief values of the book will be its suggestiveness. No one can read it, especially if there be a thoughtful and prayerful interest, without being anxious to know more about the great continent and its people just emerging into new light and hope, and without being eager to have some part in the blessed work of the redemption of Africa.

(Bishop) J. C. HARTZELL.

On the Sea, January 20, 1905.



## A PERSONAL WORD

It is quite as essential that a reader should understand the point of view of a book before reading it as that one should see a painting from the point where light, angle, and distance combine for the best effects.

An important feature of the viewpoint of the present volume is that Africa is treated as a unit, an enormous unit. As Frederic Perry Noble says, "Africa is not a country. It is a continent. It is equivalent to six continents. It is a world in itself." Perhaps the desire to transmit to others my own impression of the immensity of Africa may be indicated by citing a reason for uniformly using the third person in the following chapters, even when making use of personal experiences or of incidents which came under my observation. I feared that to suspend the vision of Africa as a whole in order to magnify even momentarily some little fraction which I had personally touched might detract from the

vision of the great continental total. After all, it is not so much whether one reiterates his personal relation to what he tells as whether he maintains the attitude of one who sees what he relates. I have therefore hoped that, having personalized by a tour of the continent my library acquaintance with its history, natural features, political conditions, peoples, and customs, I might be able in some measure to communicate a personal flavor to the entire book.

The chief characteristic of the viewpoint of these pages is man: man as he is found in Africa. Everything that does not have a definite and vital relation to the present-day African is subordinated or eliminated. Further, consideration of the African is centered upon his religious life; what that life is before Christianity affects it; what it is and may become under the influence of Christianity. It is religious Africa in the broadest sense that is the perspective of this little volume.

Since the influence of authorities which strongly affect the viewpoint may be so subtle as not to permit of reference in the text or foot-notes, it is most fitting that I should here mention my indebtedness to Arthur Silva White, *Development of*



*Africa*; J. Scott Keltie, *Partition of Africa*; Robert H. Nassau, *Fetichism in West Africa*, and Frederic Perry Noble, *Redemption of Africa*. These four are the English classics on physical, political, and religious (Pagan and Missionary) Africa. Mary H. Kingsley's entertaining works on African travel, Robert Brown's elaborate story of African exploration, and Stanford's compendium of African geography also have been prime factors in filling out the background of this study. The most important of the many other books from which tribute has been levied are referred to in the foot-notes or are included in the bibliography.

It is with peculiar pleasure and gratitude that I make the following acknowledgments: To African missionaries; to the secretaries of mission boards, and particularly to the Editorial Committee of the Young People's Missionary Movement, for suggestive and corrective criticisms, which have shown a rare degree of painstaking discrimination; to Bishop Hartzell, who introduced me to the great world of Africa, and whose influence with government officials and natives in various parts of the continent was of invaluable service in

speeding and deepening my personal acquaintance with conditions and problems; lastly and chiefly to one whose constant and invaluable helpfulness, from the first day until now, in reading, suggestion, criticism, revision, and even in occasional composition, has made it possible for me, under the pressure of other duties, to prepare this volume at all, and who, because bearing my name, with characteristic self-effacement, will not permit hers to be used as joint author.

WILSON S. NAYLOR.

Appleton, Wisconsin, June 1, 1905.

# CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. THE DARK CONTINENT.....	xv
II. DARK PEOPLES AND THEIR CUSTOMS.....	37
III. A RELIGION OF DARKNESS.....	75
IV. WHAT OF THE NIGHT?.....	105
V. THE MORNING COMETH!.....	139
VI. THE RELIGION OF LIGHT.....	165
VII. HERALDS OF THE DAWN.....	205
VIII. DAYBREAK .....	249
APPENDIX A—CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.....	287
APPENDIX B—BIBLIOGRAPHY .....	295
APPENDIX C—STATISTICAL TABLES.....	300
RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS OF AFRICA.....	304
SPECIMENS OF BIBLE TRANSLATIONS INTO AFRICAN DIALECTS .....	305
INDEX .....	307

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

MESSENGERS OF THE GOSPEL.....	<i>Frontispiece.</i>	
RELIEF MAP OF AFRICA.....	<i>Following page</i>	12
VARIOUS METHODS OF CONSTRUCTING NATIVE HUTS.....	<i>Facing page</i>	62
CHARMS AND FETICHES.....	“ “	85
INDUSTRIAL MISSIONS.....	“ “	131
MEDICAL MISSIONS.....	“ “	152
EDUCATIONAL MISSIONS.....	“ “	171
THE AMERICAN MISSION TRAINING COLLEGE, AS- SIUT, EGYPT.....	<i>Facing page</i>	194
EVANGELISTIC MISSIONS.....	“ “	241
TRANSFORMATION OF HOME LIFE.....	“ “	271
OUT OF DARKNESS INTO LIGHT—WEST AFRICA.	<i>Facing page</i>	279
MAP SHOWING DISTRIBUTION OF RELIGIONS IN AFRICA.....	<i>Facing page</i>	110
MAP OF AFRICA—1805-1905.....	<b>End of Book</b>	

## THE DARK CONTINENT

I view the end of the geographical feat as the beginning of the missionary enterprise.

DAVID LIVINGSTONE.

# I

## THE DARK CONTINENT

THE term "Dark Continent," applied to Africa by Stanley, has a threefold application. Africa, until the nineteenth century, was the one continent whose vast interior, so far as geographical certainties are concerned, lay in unpenetrated darkness. It is the one continent whose population is composed almost entirely of dark peoples. It is the one continent whose native religion is without sacred writings and definite systems; a religion whose followers are but wanderers in "the blackness of darkness." The present chapter has to do with the breaking of the day of geographical knowledge and with the development of the continent.

**The Dark Continent**

Accurate knowledge of Africa before the Christian era included only the regions along the Mediterranean and Red Sea coasts, Egypt, the Nile, the Great Desert, and the Ethiopian territory centering in Meroe on the Upper Nile. It is clear, however, that reliable information concerning

**Before the Christian Era**

the far interior did sometimes reach the coast. Maps from about 500 B.C. show remarkable accuracy, considering that they were guesswork, in locating the "Mountains of the Moon" at the headwaters of the Nile. A Greek writer of the fourth century B.C., also depending upon hearsay, mentions great lakes as the source of that river.

**The Gold of  
Ophir and the  
Phœnicians**

The gold-bearing region of southeast Africa is now regarded by many careful scholars as identical with the Ophir of Solomon's time.<sup>1</sup> There are ruins in the same section of South Africa which point to the ancient occupation of that part of the continent by people other than the ancestors of the present race, the evidence being all but conclusive that these people were Phœnicians.<sup>2</sup> In the light of modern knowledge of the earth's surface it is also quite certain that the continent was circumnavigated by the Phœnicians, although the ancient historian who records the story doubts its truth.<sup>3</sup> But whatever the correctness of these present-day conjectures, the fact remains that the ancient world was little the wiser for the voyages of gold hunters, colonists, and explorers.

<sup>1</sup>Hall and Neal, *Ancient Ruins of Rhodesia*.

<sup>2</sup>A. Wilmot, *Monomotapa*.

<sup>3</sup>Rawlinson's Herodotus, IV: 42.



For the most part popular notions were exceedingly indefinite, and Ethiopia continued to be an all-inclusive term for the unknown or little known regions beyond the more familiar North African points. Herodotus, the Greek historian of the fifth century B.C., reflects the current thought not only of his own time but of many centuries thereafter. With ample elasticity he sets the bounds of the country: "Where the meridian declines toward the setting sun the Ethiopian territory reaches, being the extreme part of the habitable world." He is impressed with the products of the land and with the stalwart inhabitants, for he adds: "It produces much gold, huge elephants, wild beasts of all kinds, ebony, and men of large stature, very handsome and long-lived.<sup>1</sup> As if to make room for all its people, Homer says: "The populations of Ethiopia, the most remote in the world, live some toward the rising and others toward the setting sun."<sup>2</sup>

Scarcely anything was added to geographical certainties until the fifteenth century after Christ. It is true that the Arabian invasion of the seventh century scat-

**Popular  
Notions  
Indefinite**

**From First to  
Fifteenth  
Centuries**

<sup>1</sup>Rawlinson's Herodotus, III: 114.

<sup>2</sup>The Odyssey, I: 22-25.

tered a host of foreigners throughout North Africa, but although their influence upon all succeeding African history has been of vital importance because of its bearing upon the question of Africa for Christ or for Mohammed,<sup>1</sup> their contribution to the world's knowledge of their adopted continent was slight. The fifteenth century brought the dawn of modern enterprise. An era of discovery followed.

**Prince Henry  
the Navigator  
and West Coast  
Exploration**

Portugal, in the person of Prince Henry the Navigator (1394-1460), took the lead in the West-Coast exploration of Africa. In the face of obstacles that would have discouraged a less determined character, Prince Henry pushed his mariners as far south as the west Guinea Coast. His zeal for discovery, and his energetic, scientific methods, far in advance of his age, have given him a place among the world's greatest explorers. Added to this is a fact which should make his name doubly honored by Christians—the fact that Prince Henry was the pioneer of those missionary explorers who, 400 years later, were to per-

<sup>1</sup>The author's preference would be for the spelling *Muhammad*, *Muslim*, *Kopt*, *Kongo*, but the forms which are still popularly prevalent for these words are used throughout the book.

form some of the supreme feats in African discoveries.

After Prince Henry's death Portugal continued explorations southward until the continent was rounded (1487) by Bartholomew Diaz. Diaz called the southernmost point the Cape of Storms, because of the extremely rough weather encountered there. But his patron, King John II, would have none of it. "Nay," said he, "the Cape of Good Hope shalt thou forever be named, for by this cape shall we sail to India." Ten years later Vasco da Gama fulfilled this prophecy, and made the long-hoped-for new route to India a fact (1497-98).

**Cape of Good Hope**

Da Gama's voyage gave him the opportunity of touching at points on the east coast. He reached one of these ports on Christmas Day and therefore named it, and the surrounding country as well, Natal, in commemoration of the nativity of our Lord.

**Vasco da Gama and the East Coast**

The outline of the continent was now accurately known. There was also the certainty of a great river (the Congo) other than the Nile, although any statement as to the upper reaches and sources of either was pure conjecture. The

**Outline of Continent Known**

## 6 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

whole interior was still shrouded in darkness.

**Prester John,  
Abyssinia, and  
the Portuguese**

Late in the fifteenth century a fanciful story that had been gaining ground for many years—a story of a wonderful Christian state, presided over by a great Christian prince—led the Portuguese to undertake a pilgrimage to Abyssinia, the region over which “Prester John” was believed to hold his sway. The Prester John tale was proved false, but the Portuguese, in quest of the marvelous, were the first to enter into negotiations (1520) with that interesting country whose present king is Menelik, “King of Kings of Ethiopia.”

**Rivals to Por-  
tuguese**

The English, French, and Dutch, quick to see the advantage of the commerce which the Portuguese were establishing with Africa, were themselves before the close of the sixteenth century carrying on a brisk trade with the West Coast tribes. The so-called “grains of paradise,”<sup>1</sup> ivory, gold, and slaves were accounted the most profitable cargoes. Hence the names Grain Coast, Ivory Coast, Gold Coast, Slave Coast, as applied to the different sections

<sup>1</sup>The spicy seeds, “grains of paradise,” were much in demand in Europe.

of the Guinea Coast, indicate the character of the trade from each section.

Settlements by the Portuguese on the Guinea Coast, at the mouth of the Congo, and in East Africa had followed in the wake of their discoveries. Such settlements were naturally supplemented by those of other nationalities as the trade of each increased. During the seventeenth century more and permanent settlements were effected, including those along the Gambia by the English, along the Senegal by the French, and in South Africa by the Dutch.

**European Settlements**

Yet, notwithstanding the considerable knowledge of coast regions gained through European traders and residents, the maps of the period reflect an absolute ignorance concerning the vast bulk of the interior. As no facts were available, fancy supplied details, and sketches of palaces and strange animals did duty for physical features.

**Map Making**

Individual efforts toward interior exploration had been made from time to time after Prince Henry's day. Practically all of these had started in from the West Coast, and all had met with varied, though slight, success. But in 1768 James Bruce, a Scotchman, succeeded in reaching Abyss-

**Individual Efforts toward Interior Exploration**

sinia, where he remained for five years.<sup>1</sup> He it was who gave the first extended information about that country. Among other experiences of special value to geographers was a visit to the headwaters of one of the Abyssinian tributaries of the Nile.<sup>2</sup>

**The African  
Association**

Another event of great importance to Africa occurred in the eighteenth century. This was the organization (1788) of the "African Association," whose aim was the undertaking and directing of systematic, scientific exploration. The time for better methods had arrived, and an organization had promise of larger success than could be reached through the efforts of travelers, adventurers and traders, valuable and praiseworthy though these had been. Individual exceptions there were later, however, notable among them being Livingstone's and Stanley's first expeditions. The marvelous results of the explorations of the nineteenth century proved the wisdom of the pioneer organization, whose mission was later taken up by the Royal Geographical Society of London.

<sup>1</sup>James Bruce, *Travels and Discoveries in Abyssinia*.

<sup>2</sup>Bruce's visit to the headwaters of the Blue Nile scarcely can be classed among discoveries. Jesuit missionaries, a century before, were the real discoverers.

The methods inaugurated by the African Association were pursued by its successors until the entire interior was mapped out. Instead of scattering efforts, expedition after expedition was centered upon each unknown section until each was at least roughly explored.

**Scientific  
Exploration**

It took precisely a century (1788-1888) to accomplish these explorations. Thus from 1788 to 1830, West Africa, north of the Guinea Coast and east to Lake Tchad, with particular reference to the discovery of the sources of the Niger and the following of its puzzling course, was the field of operations. The discovery of snow-capped peaks in East Africa, and of the great lakes and their relation to the Nile; Livingstone's extensive explorations in South Africa, his journey from Linyanti in South Central Africa to St. Paul de Loanda on the West Coast, his return across the continent to the East Coast, and his discovery of the Zambezi River and its magnificent Victoria Falls resulted from the endeavors of the years between 1830 and 1862. From 1862 to 1876 the headwaters and course of the Congo were the objects of search.<sup>1</sup> From 1876 to 1887 nothing of

**A Century of  
Exploration**

<sup>1</sup>It is difficult for the younger generation to realize

importance was attempted. In the latter year Stanley undertook his third and final expedition, the Emin Pasha Relief. He crossed the continent from west to east—his second transcontinental exploit—and reached the Abyssinian coast in 1888.

**Reliable  
Geographical  
Information**

Reliable information regarding the hitherto unknown, or dimly known, interior was at last available. Mountains, lakes, and rivers all became real, and the proper position of each became manifest. The maps of Africa were no longer imaginary cartoons, but fairly accurate drawings.

**Exploration  
not Minute**

It must not be understood that exploration has been minute. There are still large districts about which little or nothing of detail is known, but taken as a whole the picture may be said to be complete. The sketching is all finished, the background all in. Nothing is lacking except the final delicate touches.

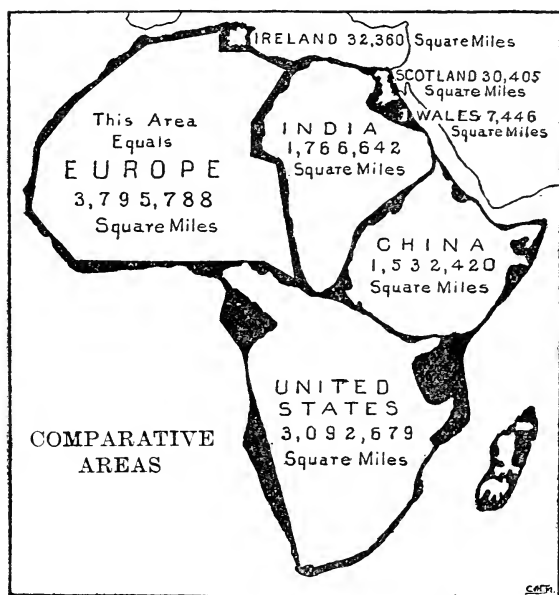
**Size of Africa**

Of all the continents Africa is second in size to Asia alone. With the islands, Madagascar, the Madeiras, the Canaries, and

the recentness of the opening up of Africa. Stanley's journey down the Congo was not finished until 1877. The Encl. Brit. (ninth ed.) in an article evidently written in 1874 says, "The equatorial region of dense forests in Central Africa is still one of greatest terræ incognitæ of the globe."



others, Africa has about 11,500,000 square miles of territory to Asia's 16,000,000. Africa is about three times the size of Europe, and about half again larger than



either South or North America. A striking comparison between the size of Africa and that of other continents has been made by Bishop Hartzell: "There is room enough on the lower end of the continent for the

whole of the United States with her 82,000,000 of people; Europe, with her many states and hundreds of millions, can be placed on one side of Central Africa; China, with her 400,000,000 could be accommodated on the other half of Central Africa, and there is room for all India, and Wales, Scotland and Ireland in the lower valley of the Nile and along the coasts of the Mediterranean; while there is plenty of room for Porto Rico and the Philippines on the island of Madagascar."

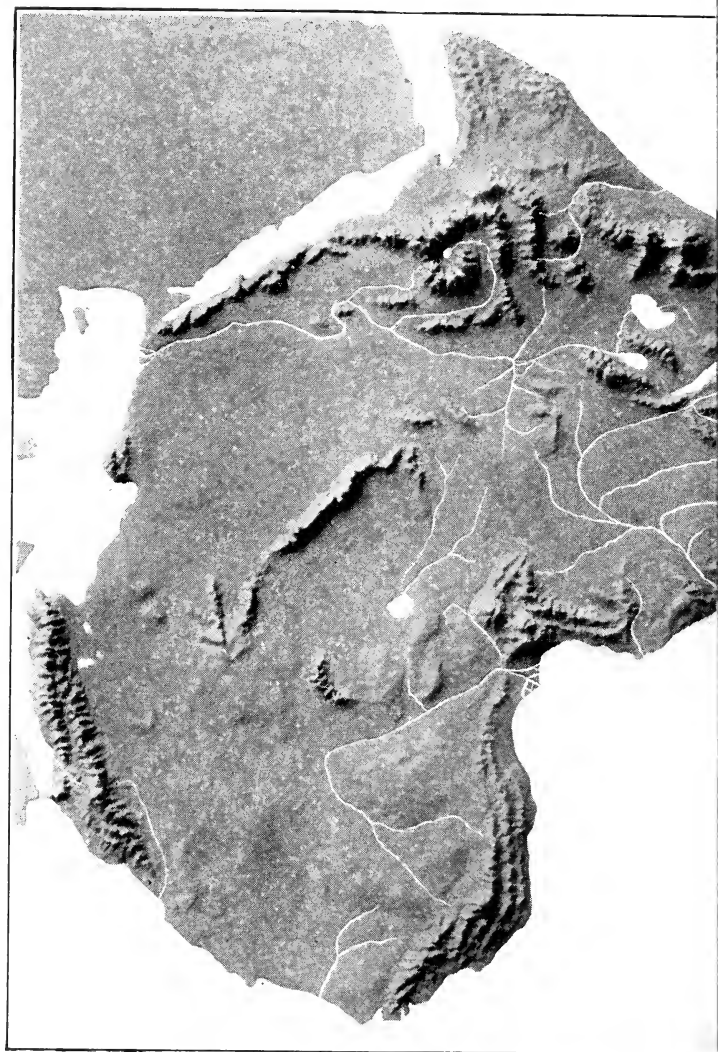
#### **Surface**

Low-lying coast land borders the continent, extending back in varying distances of a mile or less to two or three hundred miles. Rising from these coastal lands, gradually increasing and often steep elevations form a series of narrow plateaus all around the continent, until the great continental plateau is reached. It is as if enormous encircling steps led up to an immense central platform of uneven surface, mountains, lakes, and rivers making decided breaks in the level.

#### **Mountains**

The outer rim of this continental plateau, made up of the successive plateaus ascending from the coastal lands, might be compared to a buttressed castle wall, irregular in outline and height, with mountains serv-









ing as battlements. The seaward face of this rim is often so abrupt and broken that it forms low mountain ranges, such as those of Lower Guinea. Indeed, practically all African mountains are but elevations along the edge of the upper plateau. The Atlas range in northwest Africa is not fully explored, but is known to include mountains of commanding height. In East Africa, near the equator, are the volcanic peaks of Kenia, Kilima-Njaro, and Ruwenzori. These are the highest mountains in Africa, Kilima-Njaro exceeding 19,000 feet. To the north is the mountainous section of Abyssinia, and to the south and southwest the Drakenberg and other ranges. Kamerun Mountain on the West Coast, like the peaks in the east, is volcanic.

The greatest lakes are in East Central Africa, Victoria Nyanza,<sup>1</sup> Tanganyika, and Nyasa being the largest. The waters of these three lakes are among the sources of supply for three of the four great rivers of Africa—the Nile, the Congo,<sup>2</sup> and the Zambezi. Victoria Nyanza takes world rank as

**Lakes**

<sup>1</sup>Nyanza means lake.

<sup>2</sup>Tanganyika is not regularly a reservoir of the Congo. In recent times, only at the overflow during seasons of excessive rains do its waters reach the Congo.

a fresh water lake, since only Lake Superior is larger. Lake Tanganyika's extreme width is not more than forty miles, but it is the longest fresh water lake in the world. Nyasa also is narrow, and is not as long as Tanganyika by seventy miles. Aside from the lakes of East Africa there are those which are self-contained, that is, those which receive streams but have no outlet to the sea. Lake Tchad in north Central Africa is the largest of these.

#### Rivers

The three great rivers mentioned drain almost the entire southern and eastern portions of the continental plateau, while the fourth, the Niger, drains the southern portion of West Africa above the Guinea Coast. Africa's plateau formation is the occasion of rapids and cataracts in all of the rivers. These occur as the rivers flow from the higher levels of the upper plateau down through the lower levels to the sea.

#### The Nile

The Nile is the longest of the four rivers. The annual overflow, its peculiar characteristic, results in making a fertile valley of what otherwise would be barren land. The artificial reservoir built on the Upper Nile is of immense advantage to the productivity of Egypt in that it assures a more



equal annual water supply to the lower river.

The Niger, unlike the other rivers, has **The Niger** no great lake as a feeder, but its sources are supplied by an abundant rainfall. Neither is its lower course so much hindered by steep descents, as is particularly true of the Congo and the Zambezi. Rapids are therefore less numerous—a fact of significance to commerce.

Of all the rivers the Congo is the most **The Congo** important. It drains an area rich in valuable forests and of amazing fertility. Stanley Falls and the cataracts of the lower river are serious obstacles to navigation, but, on the other hand, there are 1,000 miles of superb waterway between Stanley Pool and Stanley Falls, while the entire Congo system includes at least 10,000 miles of navigable streams. The possibilities of a country penetrated by such a river system are well nigh incalculable, as are the opportunities it affords for comparatively easy access to the native populations of Central Africa.

The Zambezi is the shortest of the rivers, **The Zambezi** though it exceeds the Nile in volume. By its junction with the Shire River it completes the water connection between Lake

Nyasa and the Indian Ocean. When the time comes for a line of railway past the rapids of the Shire River,<sup>1</sup> the Zambezi will have a large part in the speedier development of the lake country, and will also afford a readier access from the malarial coast levels to the higher, more healthful interior.

#### **Victoria Falls**

Victoria Falls, on the Zambezi, rivals Niagara in grandeur and excels it in magnitude. That the British Scientific Association should propose to hold a meeting in sight of these falls, a wonder of nature which fifty years ago was scarcely known, is noteworthy. The prospect of this meeting hastened the execution of plans for converting the section immediately adjacent to the falls into the likeness of a civilized land. Hotels, parks, roads, railroads, and bridges have been designed by experts in architecture, engineering, and landscape gardening, and have been made to comport with their surroundings, and not to intrude themselves upon the grandeur of creation.

#### **Smaller Rivers**

The Gambia and Senegal rivers are navigable streams of the Atlantic Coast. Since their discovery in the fifteenth century they have been of service in commerce and in

<sup>1</sup>Such a line of railway is now proposed.

the development of the West African country adjacent to them. The Limpopo and Orange rivers in South Africa are of some length. Almost all other rivers are the short coast streams which take their rise near the edge of the upper plateau.

The Sahara Desert has an area about equal to that of the United States, including Alaska. This vast territory is not, however, one wide waste of sand. Besides the oases, there are semi-desert or steppe lands, highlands and rocky plateaus, a few mountains, and, for a part of the year, rivers and lakes. Vegetation is not, therefore, confined wholly to oases. In South Africa is the Kalahari Desert. There are also desert and semi-desert lands in Somaliland and along the Red Sea.

#### **Deserts**

The "savannahs" of the Sudan and southward throughout much of Central Africa are the grass lands of the continent. These savannahs differ from our prairies in that they are sparsely wooded, trees growing over them singly or in groves. On the lower plateau levels of East Africa and in the Zambezi neighborhood the savannahs become "veldts," and "kopjes" (isolated mounds) give variety to the landscape. On the higher plateaus between the

#### **Savannahs**

southern mountain ranges, where the rainfall is scantier, are the "karroos," or dry lands. The soil permits of sufficient grass growth for excellent pasturage.

**Forests**

In the Upper Congo basin, almost at the center of the savannah lands, and covering an area many thousands of square miles in extent, are dense tropical forests, with profuse tangled undergrowth. Dense forests are also typical of the Upper and Lower Guinea coasts, and some mountainous regions are heavily timbered.

**Varied Climate**

Africa, lying largely in the torrid zone, has even in that zone a decidedly varied climate. Elevation is partly responsible for this variation. The southern arm of the continent, having a smaller area within the torrid belt, and also a higher average elevation, has a lower average temperature than the northern portion. The mountain summits of East Africa are covered with perpetual snow, while decreasing elevation means increasing temperature. Even in the Sahara there are extremes. The nights are cool and frosts are not unknown. Distance from the sea also affects climate because of difference in amount of moisture. The narrower southern portion of the continent, again, has relatively a more abun-

dant rainfall than has the northern section. The dense tropical forest regions of both are profusely watered. Over most of the continent rainy and dry seasons prevail, the length of each depending upon locality.

South of five degrees north latitude, except for a narrow strip along the East Coast, the temperature for the year averages under 80 degrees, while north of that latitude the average is above 80 degrees, the hottest portions being in the western Sahara and Sudan, and in the Upper Nile valley and the adjacent desert. Outside of the torrid zone, in both North and South Africa, are regions whose temperature ranges under 72 degrees, while in some—Morocco, Algeria, and Cape Colony, for example—the range is under 64 degrees.

Since the character of the products of a country depend upon its climate, African products range from the scant life of the desert to the abundance of a soil prodigal in fertility, and from tropical vegetation to that common to temperate climes. Only a suggestion of these various products may be given. The Mediterranean states yield, like Southern Europe, grapes, olives, figs, and the like. Esparto grass for paper-

**Temperature**

**Products of  
North and  
South Africa**

making, though less used than formerly, is still largely exported, while the cork-oak forests of the Atlas mountains help to supply the cork market. The Nile valley grows cotton, sugar, rice, wheat, and other grains, and vegetables. South Africa, too, raises fine grapes, but otherwise crops such as wheat and corn are those more adapted to the generally cooler climate. In both North and South Africa grass lands supply pasturage for successful sheep and goat raising. In South Africa, at least, grazing predominates over farming. Ostrich culture is also a South African industry.

**Products of  
Tropical Africa**

The Sahara oases can always be depended upon for dates, while both the Sahara and Kalahari deserts furnish a scant living for wandering desert tribes and for their cattle. The savannah lands are adapted both to agriculture and to grazing. In the Sudan cattle raising is the chief occupation. In equatorial Africa anything suited to a tropical climate can be raised with a minimum of labor. Bananas, cassava, coffee, sugar, and other products thrive astonishingly. Scratch the soil, plant the seed, and await a full harvest. Such agricultural instruction may be a slight ex-

aggregation, but it does not fall far below the mark. The upper Congo region and the forests of the Guinea coasts produce the oil-palm, rubber creepers, ebony, and mahogany in great abundance.



The minerals of Africa include gold in the Upper Guinea Coast region, in south-east Africa in the Witwaters Rand of the Transvaal, in Rhodesia, and in German and British East Africa; diamonds in South

**Minerals**

Africa,<sup>1</sup> the richest fields in the world being in the Kimberley district; silver in Abyssinia, Nubia, and the Sudan; coal in South Africa, in the neighborhood of Victoria Falls,<sup>2</sup> and northward; iron in Central Africa; copper in South and Central Africa, and both of the last named metals in the Atlas region. Salt is produced in deserts in the salt beds of the "shotts,"<sup>3</sup> those of the western Sahara yielding the largest quantities. With the exception of the gold and diamond fields, scarcely any of these mineral deposits have been worked, so that the possibilities are enormous.

#### Gold

The gold-bearing areas of the Guinea Coast, despite an already large output, are by no means exhausted, although South Africa has so far eclipsed the Gold Coast that less is heard of the latter. The south-east African gold region, supposed to be identical with Solomon's Ophir, is almost fabulously rich now. One vein in the Johannesburg vicinity is forty miles long,

<sup>1</sup>The largest diamond ever discovered was found in South Africa in 1905.

<sup>2</sup>The coal vein discovered by Livingstone near Victoria Falls is now being mined by an English company. The vein varies from ten to thirty feet in thickness and is believed to be of vast extent.

<sup>3</sup>"Shotts" are lakes of desert and semi-desert regions. During a part of each year many of them are only salt-basins.



from two to five feet thick and, so far as it has been followed, extends in a slanting plane for a mile beneath the surface.

Owing to the ivory trade elephants are decreasing in numbers. Formerly almost the whole great area southward from the Sahara was considered the "ivory district." Elephants are still hunted, and ivory is still a staple of African commerce, but the amount diminishes yearly, and unless sharp measures are taken to prevent the destruction of elephants, ivory, before many years, will be rare.

**Ivory**

The last quarter of the nineteenth century saw Europe engaged in a partition of the yet unclaimed territory of the continent, and in the settling of boundary disputes. Since the days of Egypt's power no really great state has been maintained in Africa. It was therefore a comparatively easy matter, and a natural sequence of many scores of years of coast occupation by European nations, for these same nations gradually to assume more or less of control over the sections which later came to be reckoned as belonging within their several "spheres of influence."<sup>1</sup>

**Partition of  
Africa among  
European  
Powers**

"Spheres of influence," so-called, are those sections which, because of physical boundaries, or pri-

**Africa in 1900**

By the beginning of the present century agreements had been reached by the nations involved, and of the 11,500,000 square miles of African territory scarcely more than 2,000,000 remained that were not claimed by European powers. Indeed, Abyssinia and Liberia (with a combined area of 195,000 square miles), at the extreme east and west sides of the continent, comprise the only territory not directly or indirectly under foreign influence. The Congo Free State, whose boundaries include almost the entire basin of the Congo River, is under the guardianship of the King of Belgium. Morocco is under an independent sultan, but French domination in Morocco and Tripoli grows more and more pronounced. Egypt is only nominally under Turkish control, England really holding the reins of government.

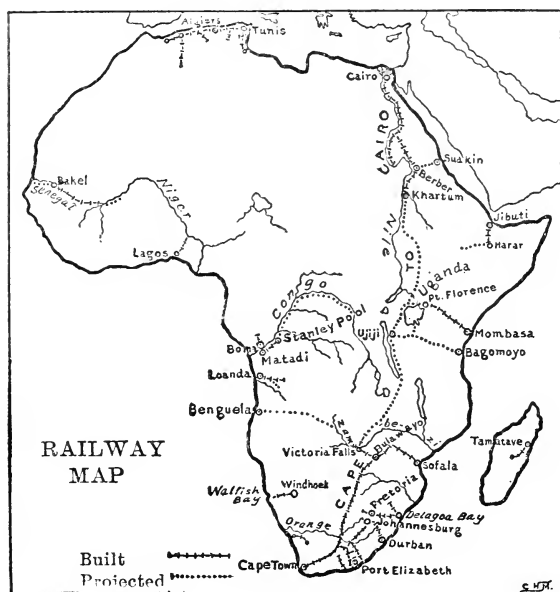
**European Enterprise**

European enterprise is developing the continent. Improvements in a new coun-

ority of entrance, or trade reasons, are, by mutual consent of the European Powers, resigned to the influence of one particular Power.

In distinction from sphere of influence is the "hinterland." The hinterland is such a portion of the interior as lies adjacent to the coast "possession" of any Power, and is a natural adjunct to it. The prime object of the hinterland provision is that ready access to the interior may never be hindered by any other Power.

try are necessarily introduced by slow processes, but considering the difficulties overcome progress in Africa is little short of marvelous. This is especially true of rail-



road building. The Cape to Cairo railway is built southward to Khartum (1,300 miles) and northward to Victoria Falls (1,600 miles). When these termini are connected the road will be one of the most

important transcontinental lines in the world. Likewise 300 miles of railroad up the Congo, connecting the lower river with the navigation of the middle river, are now in operation, and 900 miles more are projected. There are several lines in South Africa, and a line from Mombasa on the East Coast to Uganda and the north shore of Victoria Nyanza.<sup>1</sup> Other lines, in process of construction or completed, extend inland from the East and West coasts. The most recent project is the building of a railroad from the junction of the Atbara with the Nile to the Red Sea. This will furnish an important outlet for the Sudan trade, and will be a much less expensive means of transportation than is possible by the Nile railway.

The completion of the Mombasa-Uganda railway was a triumph for American bridge builders, who, in spite of delayed materials and labor troubles, accomplished their share of the construction in half the time proposed by any competing company. A genuine American Fourth of July celebration on the shores of Victoria Nyanza was thus made possible in 1902, the

<sup>1</sup>It is planned to complete an important transcontinental line east and west by connecting the Congo and the Mombasa-Uganda railways.

initial trip over the new road having been completed upon that day.<sup>1</sup>

The vast possibilities of future African commerce are hinted at in the size of figures relating to present trade while the continent is as yet in an undeveloped state. About \$20,000,000 worth of diamonds are taken from the Kimberley mines each year, \$350,000,000 worth being the output of uncut stones (doubled in valuation when cut) since 1868. A total of \$200,000,000 worth of gold has been exported from the Gold Coast. The present annual gold production of South Africa is \$50,000,000. In palm-oil exportation \$2,500,000 was the figure reached in 1900 from British Nigeria alone. Besides these there is still a large trade in ivory, and an increasing trade in rubber, mahogany, ebony, wool, and other articles. Africa's foreign commerce, exports and imports, amounted in 1901 to a grand total of \$700,000,000.<sup>2</sup> Of imports, intoxicating liquors take a balefully significant rank. The native demand for the things of civilization grows apace with the

**Commercial  
Possibilities**

<sup>1</sup>A. B. Lueder, *World's Work*, July, 1903.

<sup>2</sup>This figure is deficient because complete statistics are not available. The figures in this paragraph are compiled from G. F. Williams, *Diamond Mines of South Africa*; E. D. Morel, *Affairs of West Africa*; the *Statesman's Year Book*, and other standard works.

native contact with the white man, so that imports to tickle native fancy are more and more on the increase. Aside from these there are the large importations to the white population and the developing companies.

**The Native as a Factor**

Africa's importance to the world is dependent, however, not so much upon what the country possesses of natural resources, nor upon what it develops of domestic or foreign commerce, as upon what the native himself becomes.

**The White Man's Responsibility**

Africa, with its nearly 150,000,000 of native population, is in a certain large sense under European control. The native is as yet incapable of self-government. Therefore, what the native is to become depends upon the white man. The white man holds the destiny of Africa in his hands for better or for worse.

**The Cost of a Continent**

At a cost beyond all reckoning the continent has passed from prehistoric darkness to twentieth century daybreak. It is estimated that of explorers over 600 died as a direct result of the death-dealing climate and the consequent hardships of travel. Of missionaries the number is unknown, but in 1902 seven of the leading missionary societies in the United States

furnished lists showing that the average length of service of the missionaries under their auspices had been eight years, and that since 1833 these seven societies had given 195 lives for Africa. When it is remembered that these are but seven of the ninety-five societies working in Africa, one can form some idea of the cost in the lives of missionaries.<sup>1</sup> The roll of honor of those who, through the centuries, as conquerors, geographers, explorers, colonizers, missionaries, soldiers, statesmen, have contributed, bit by bit, here a little, there a little, to the sum total of knowledge concerning Africa, or to its present state of development, represents almost matchless achievements.

Among the most illustrious of whatever calling, connected with African history, none stands out so majestic in his loneliness, so lofty in his purpose, so superb in his devotion, as does David Livingstone, the missionary explorer. Such tribute in no sense belittles the magnificent character and work of others. It rather magnifies them. For to be in anywise comparable to Livingstone in itself is praise.

**David  
Livingstone**

<sup>1</sup>S. Earl Taylor, *Price of Africa*.

The missionary element in the development of a country is apt to be overlooked or only slightly mentioned. This cannot be done with any degree of fairness in connection with Africa. It is well here to call to mind the important part which Christian missions have had in Africa's history. Only thus will it be possible to understand why it is peculiarly a missionary continent, and why Christianity is the leading force in the molding of its savage tribes into civilized communities. But a few instances may be given. Prince Henry the Navigator was more than an eager explorer. A part of his avowed purpose in undertaking his voyages was the conversion of the Negroes. Jesuit missionaries early in the seventeenth century discovered the sources of the Abai.<sup>1</sup> Discoveries in East Africa made by Krapf and Rebmann during missionary tours led to the explorations which resulted in the discovery of the great lakes, and of the Nile flowing out of Victoria Nyanza. Explorations in South and Central Africa are a monument to Livingstone's tireless energy. Grenfell of the Congo mission made the important discovery of the Ubangi River. Macken-

<sup>1</sup>The Blue Nile.



zie's influence was invaluable in promoting the extension of Great Britain's beneficent control over wide sections explored by Livingstone. Indeed, the history of Christian missions in Africa forms part of the history of the opening of the continent. The testimony of W. T. Stead<sup>1</sup> to British missionary influence is applicable to all missionary endeavor in Africa. "South Africa," he says, "is the product of three forces—conquest, trade, and missions, and of the three the first counts for the least and the last for the greatest factor in the expansion of civilization in Africa. Missionaries have been everywhere the pioneers of empire. The frontier has advanced on the stepping-stones of missionary graves."

Missionaries have given their lives, not for conquest, or glory, or personal gain, but that by advancing Africa's interests in every possible way they might by all means save some of Africa's people. They have been missionaries first and always. Statecraft has been a part of missionary labor. Explorations have been incident to missionary journeys made for the purpose of spying out the land, of ascertaining cen-

**Missionaries'  
Purpose**

<sup>1</sup>Editor of the *English Review of Reviews*.

ters of population, and of deciding upon suitable locations for stations; or, as was the case with Livingstone's explorations, of opening the continent to trade, civilization, and Christianity, that the slave traffic might be done away with and the people uplifted. Livingstone struck the keynote of his own and others' heroic work when he said, "As far as I myself am concerned, the opening of the new central country is a matter for congratulation only in so far as it opens up a prospect for the elevation of the inhabitants. I view the end of the geographical feat as the beginning of the missionary enterprise."

#### QUESTIONS FOR STUDY.

These questions have a twofold purpose: First, to assist the average student partly in reviewing the most important topics of the chapter and partly in thinking out further conclusions. Those marked \* may serve as a basis for more extended thought and discussion. It is not to be expected that these should be answered without careful reflection. Second, to assist leaders of mission study classes in bringing out the points of the lesson. Leaders should rarely

use the entire list in a single meeting, but should freely select, modify and supplement. In addition to the use of these questions, they should not fail to obtain from their denominational boards helps containing full suggestions for the conduct of each session of the class.

### QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER I

AIM: TO EXAMINE THE SIGNS OF THE TIMES FOR THE  
EVANGELIZATION OF AFRICA.

*I...How recently has Africa become well known?*

- 1 How much of Africa was known by civilized peoples before the time of Christ?
- 2\* How did the opportunity of the early Church for evangelizing Africa compare with ours?
- 3 What nation took the lead in exploring Africa after the Crusades?
- 4 What do you know of Prince Henry the Navigator, and his successors?
- 5 How much was known of Africa in 1788?
- 6 Indicate on the map the progress of discovery since that time.
- 7 What great section was opened up less than thirty years ago?
- 8 From the standpoint of discovery, how does Africa rank in age among the continents?

*II...Why did it take so long to open up Africa?*

- 9 In what part of Africa is low land found? where, high plateaus? where, mountains?

## 34 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

- 10 Was the first modern approach to equatorial Africa overland or from the sea? Why?
- 11 How was the progress of exploration affected by the lack of good harbors?
- 12 How, by the low-lying coast land?
- 13 How, by the fact that the ascent to the central plateau so soon confronted explorers?
- 14 What effect had this last fact on the waterways leading into the interior?
- 15 When Europeans had gained a foothold in healthy North and South Africa, what physical features hindered them from advancing into the continent?
- 16\* Compare the difficulties of exploring Africa with those of exploring North America.
- 17 What has the Church invested in the evangelization of Africa?
- 18 What do we owe to those who have overcome such difficulties?

### III...*How has the prospect improved in the last fifty years?*

- 19 When the edge of the inland plateau has been reached, are the difficulties equally great?
- 20 How does the healthfulness of the plateau compare with that of the coast?
- 21 What sort of waterways are the rivers of Africa when their lower rapids are past?
- 22 Look at the map and determine how the three great lakes will help to reach Central Africa.
- 23 What effect will short railroads from the coast to the plateau have upon transportation? what, upon health?
- 24 What effect will the European spheres of influence have upon stability and order?
- 25 Will the death-rate of future travelers and settlers be as great as that of the earlier ones? Why not?

- 26 After so much has been done, how will the progress of the future probably compare with that of the past?

IV...*What is the attitude of the commercial and political world towards Africa and the African?*

- 27\* How is the present age, as compared with the past, equipped for the development of Africa?
- 28 How will the touch of modern science affect the commercial value of the continent?
- 29 What part has the African to play in the development of the country?
- 30 Has civilized trade any regard for his best welfare?
- 31 Will it do him any real good without the gospel?
- 32 What will the liquor traffic do for him?
- 33 Should the Church lag behind the world in reaching him?
- 34 To the true Christian, what is the relation between opportunity and responsibility?
- 35 What is our responsibility for Africa as compared with that of past generations?
- 36 Do the signs of the times indicate that the Christian Church can afford to wait for another thirty years?
- 

REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

I...Traveling in Africa.

Blaikie—Personal Life of David Livingstone, Chs. VIII, IX.

Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, Chs. XIII, XIV.

Drummond—Tropical Africa, Chs. I, II.

## 36 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

Hannington—History of His Life and Work, Chs. XIII, XIV, XV.

Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, Ch. I.

James—The Wild Tribes of Sudan, Chs. I, II, X.

Stanley—Through the Dark Continent, Vol. I, Ch. V; Vol. II, Ch. I.

### II... Climate.

Blaikie—Personal Life of David Livingstone, pp. 100, 108, 115, 116.

Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, pp. 6, 7, 11, 12, 35, 241, 281.

du Plessis—A Thousand Miles in the Heart of Africa, Chs. III, IV.

Noble—Redemption of Africa, p. 154.

Stanley—Through the Dark Continent, Vol. I, pp. 100, 101, 103, 106.

Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, pp. 473, 474, 475.

### III... Commerce.

Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, Ch. XXVI.

Jack—Daybreak in Livingstonia, Ch. XIII.

Tyler—Forty Years Among the Zulus, Ch. XXX.

Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, p. 469.

Ward—Five Years with the Congo Cannibals, Pt. I, Ch. X.

DARK PEOPLES AND THEIR  
CUSTOMS

The most interesting thing in Africa is the native himself; the more I see him and study him the more I respect him. If I had a thousand tongues and each of them were inspired by the gifts of the prophets of old, all should be dedicated to pleading for this people.

BISHOP J. C. HARTZELL.



## II

### DARK PEOPLES AND THEIR CUSTOMS

AFRICA is the one continent whose population is composed almost entirely of dark peoples. For, although Africa is his home, the black man, the pure Negro, has not been left to live there alone during the centuries. The result is that through the mingling of Negro blood with that of lighter races the population of Africa is more brown than black.

**A Continent of  
Dark Peoples**

The native population is variously estimated, about 150,000,000<sup>1</sup> being approximately correct, or a little more than thirteen to the square mile, which is also North America's ratio.<sup>2</sup> The most thickly populated sections are along the Nile, the Medi-

**The Population  
150,000,000**

<sup>1</sup>Slightly less than this is the resultant from the estimates of total population of Dr. A. Supan, 1904; *Social Progress*, 1905 (based on the *Statesman's Year Book*); Stewart's *Dawn in the Dark Continent*, 1903; and the *Blue Book of Missions*, 1905.

<sup>2</sup>The white population, most numerous in South Africa, has not yet reached the 2,000,000 mark, although in recent years it has increased rapidly, owing to diamond and gold mining and other large promise of money making.

Importations of labor to South and East Africa have already added 300,000 natives of India and over 25,000 Chinese to Africa's population.

terranean and the Guinea coasts, the lower Niger basin and eastward through the Sudan to Lake Tchad, and in parts of Central Africa south of the Sudan.

**North Africans** Almost the entire portion of the continent north and east of the Sudan has a native population farther removed from the Negro racially than are any other of the large number of African tribes. Some North Africans probably have no Negro blood in their veins, some have not enough to class them among Negroes, while some (though comparatively few) do give strong evidence of Negro ancestry. The population is therefore a puzzling mixture.

**The Arabian  
Element**

Perhaps the most apparent element in many North African races is the Arabian. That this should be the case is not surprising. When in the seventh century A.D. Arabia poured forth to the conquest of the world for Mohammed, Africa, close at hand, offered an inviting field. Thus Arabs in great numbers were brought among races even at that time little mixed with the Negro. Spreading over North Africa they began that assimilation with the native populations which, for more than twelve centuries, has continued in an ever-strengthening bond of kinship.

Even in sections where the racial imprint is not present, the religious imprint is nevertheless strong, for the fiery zeal of those early Moslem missionaries did not abate until the religion of the sword had cut its way far into the desert. To-day, Africa, over the region indicated (north and east of the Sudan), together with parts of the Sudan and parts of Pagan Africa, as will be shown, is a Mohammedan country.<sup>1</sup>

**Mohammedan  
Africa**

The Sudan<sup>2</sup> is the Negro section of the continent. Here are perhaps 50,000,000 of people, very few of whom are more than slightly tinged with the blood of other races. At the western extremity of the Sudan—the Guinea Coast region—is found the purest Negro type, he of the receding forehead, high cheekbones, broad, flat nose, thick lips, woolly hair, and coal-black skin.<sup>3</sup> It was from this section of Africa

**The Sudan  
Negroes**

<sup>1</sup>The Coptic and Ethiopian Christian portion of the population of Egypt and Abyssinia present the only exception to this widespread sway of Islam.

<sup>2</sup>The Sudan, stretching eastward from the Atlantic Ocean, includes the Upper Nile region. Its northern and southern boundaries are, approximately, the Sahara Desert and the latitude of the Upper Guinea Coast. It comprises a territory about 700 miles wide by 3,500 long.

<sup>3</sup>There are a few other tribes of pure Negroes in the Sudan, but a far greater number than all other tribes combined live in the Guinea Coast region.

that the largest numbers of slaves for the American trade were taken.

**The Hausas**

The Hausas, the traders of the Sudan, are among the most interesting and intelligent of its people. They possess characteristics which, if brought under the right sort of civilizing influences as interior Africa is being opened to the world, should make them of inestimable worth in the furthering of the cause of Christianity among their countrymen.

**Mohammedanism in the Sudan**

With so solid a wall of Mohammedanism to the north nothing else could be expected than that the millions of Sudanese, susceptible to the influence of a religion higher than their own Paganism, should prove fairly easy of conquest by the followers of the prophet. And it is true that a large proportion of the Sudan is already dominated by a native Mohammedan element. The thickly populated west central portion is a stronghold of Islam. The Hausa country, east of the Niger and north of the Benue, is itself under Mohammedan control, and many of the Hausas have become Mohammedans, either nominally or in fact.

**The Fulahs**

The Fulahs, one of the few Sudan peoples in whom there is but little Negro blood, serve as an example of Moslem

zeal in the Sudan. Like the Hausas the Fulahs take high rank in a character estimate of Africans. Added to their natural aggressiveness, which has made them the ruling class not only in much of the western Sudan, but among the Hausas as well, they are devoutly ardent Mohammedans. Their political influence is continually widening, and always accompanying it is their religious fervor and their proselyting zeal.

Still, along the Upper Guinea Coast and in other wide sections of the Sudan there are vast numbers of Pagan natives who are as yet unreached by Islam. These, added to the number of Sudanese who are simply nominal adherents of Mohammedanism, suggest the point where Mohammedanism and Christianity must meet at close quarters in the winning of the Pagan African to one or the other faith, and also the point where the advance of Islam must be checked if the great Pagan remainder of the continent is to be won to Christianity.

**Paganism in  
the Sudan**

Over against the North African peoples who, racially, are so slightly related to the Negro, are the Bantu peoples living south of the Sudan, in almost all of whom the Negro element is so marked that they are

**The Bantus**

classed as Negro tribes. The term Bantu as applied to these Central and South Africans does not signify a race title, but a similarity in language. The people of Uganda and of sections of the Congo basin, the Zulus, and the Bechuanas are Bantus, whose tribal names, because of the prominence given them in recent years through missionary or commercial interests, are the most familiar to Christian people.

**The Pygmies  
and the Bush-  
men**

In this Bantu portion of the continent there are also the distinct races of the Pygmy and the Bushman. These are people of peculiar interest because of their short stature,<sup>1</sup> and because comparatively little is known of them. As a rule they live wandering lives, the shy little brown Pygmies in small tribes scattered over Central Africa, where they depend upon hunting or upon what they can pick up or can procure from larger-statured tribes; the wild little yellow Bushmen in the Kalahari Desert region, where they somehow manage to keep their small bodies alive.

**The Hottentots**

The Hottentots, also living in southwest

<sup>1</sup> They average little over four feet in height. Some of the Pygmies are scarcely three feet tall.

Africa, and probably nearly related to the Bushmen, are not so fearful of contact with other races as are the Pygmies and Bushmen. Therefore much more is known of them. They were among the first Africans of modern times to whom the gospel was preached.

Africa, then, south of the Sudan, together with parts of the Sudan itself, is Pagan Africa. It is smaller in area than Mohammedan Africa, but because the latter includes the thinly populated Sahara Desert, Pagan Africa has a population of about 90,000,000 to Mohammedan Africa's 50,000,000.

**Pagan Africa**

But Pagan Africa is by no means free from Mohammedanism. Along the East Coast, from Mohammedan Somaliland past Zanzibar, Arabian influence prevails. Nor is this influence confined to the coast. As far inland as the lake district (Uganda and southward) native proselytes increase Moslem strength. The completion of the Mombasa-Uganda railway has made communication between tribes easier, and native Mohammedan influence grows more noticeable. The most recent estimate places the number of adherents to Islam in East Africa at 2,600,000. Kamerun, on the

**Mohammedanism in Pagan Africa**

West Coast, supplements these figures by 500,000.<sup>1</sup>

#### Arab Traders

Aside from this advance from east and west upon Pagan Africa is the significant fact that climate does not deter the Arab trader from penetrating anywhere into the interior. Coupled with his trade (regardless of its character) is his religion, with its easy-going creed and practice ready to influence whom it may.

#### Christian Africa

The native Christian population of Africa is slight in comparison with the great Mohammedan and Pagan numbers. Christianity, except in South Africa, and there largely because of the foreign population, can nowhere present a solid front. Its native followers are scattered here and there along the coasts and in parts of the interior. Exact figures are unavailable, but some idea may be gained from a glance at more general statistics. At a very liberal estimate the total number of the nominal Christian population in Africa, *including all white residents regardless of their beliefs*, reaches only 8,957,000.<sup>2</sup> Of these 2,665,000 are Protestants, 2,493,000 are Roman Catholics, and 3,799,000 are of the

<sup>1</sup>*Blue Book of Missions*, 1905.

<sup>2</sup>*Idem*.



# Coptic, Abyssinian, and Eastern Churches.<sup>1</sup>

Modern African languages and dialects, like African tribes, are numerous. Mention of but a few of the more prominent ones may be made. Of course, in North Africa, Arabic, although not a native tongue, is widely in use. The Arab trader has carried his language into the Sudan, but the native Hausa rivals it there, since Hausa is also a language of trade. Among the Bantu tongues the Swahili in East Africa, the Zulu in southeast Africa, and the Congo in West Africa are representative.

**Modern African Languages Numerous**

In any description of the African himself it must be remembered that there is a difference between the primitive native of the interior, away from outside influences, and the native who, through long contact with Christian or Mohammedan civilization, has in a greater or lesser degree altered his primitive mode of life.

**The Primitive and the "Civilized" African**

Changes in dress, in customs which endanger human life, and in industries are the most apparent. The primitive African

**A Comparison**

<sup>1</sup>There are about 381,000 Jews in Africa, living mainly along the Mediterranean Coast. The "Fellashas," a considerable colony of Jews, have since very early times maintained themselves in Abyssinia.

is unclothed; the other, especially along the coast, is sometimes marvelously clothed upon in his attempt to follow the fashions of the white man.<sup>1</sup> The primitive African has his own way about eating another man, or about offering him as a sacrifice to his gods, or about torturing him to death for bewitching somebody; the other engages in these and like barbarities only at the risk of severe punishment if his dark doings are found out by the foreign Powers.<sup>2</sup> The primitive African is a good smith and potter when occasion requires; the other is both, and more. His industry has responded to a desire for the things of civilization. He has taken to manufacturing, and has become a weaver of cotton cloth, a dyer, a tanner, a maker of bricks, of bark-cloth, of baskets, and mats. Such occupations furnish him with goods for barter. Or he has become a laborer and receives wages in native currency—so many brass rods, so many iron hoes, so many beads, or cowries, so much of anything else that answers for money—or on the coast usually

<sup>1</sup>The native convert to Islamism adopts the Mohammedan costume.

<sup>2</sup>Because of their intimate relation to African religion, the customs of cannibalism, human sacrifice, and witchcraft will be treated in the next chapter.

in actual money. The primitive African in grazing sections cares for small herds, that he himself may occasionally fare sumptuously, or may set a feast for an honored guest; the other has the same use for cattle and goats, and the advantage of trade. Everywhere, primitive or "civilized," the African is a farmer, at least to the extent of supplying his own necessities.

The sketch which follows purposes to deal only with the primitive native, the typical Pagan African, as he is before civilization has affected him or his way of living.

**Purpose of Following Sketch**

The African is Nature's spoiled child. Throughout much of his continent she is lavishly kind to him. She feeds him almost without the asking. She clothes him with tropical sunshine. If his necessity or his vanity calls for more covering, she furnishes it—again with no excess of labor on his part—from leaf or bark or skin. Everything that has to do with the primitive demands of his physical well-being is, as it were, ready at his hand. Intellectually, he is untrammelled by tradition or practice. He has kept himself free from educational entanglements. No a b c's, no

**The Pagan African**

puzzling multiplication tables, no grammatical rules, no toiling over copybooks, harass his brain. There is his bush-school, but the curriculum itself, as well as the length of time required to master it, is limited. Besides, it is not an eminently uplifting agency. If intellectual development were evidenced by the quantity rather than the quality of words which pass one's lips, the African might be thought to be learned, for he is an inveterate talker. "Palaver" has a chief place in his community life. He loves it and revels in it.<sup>1</sup> Spiritually, he is keenly alert to a multitudinously peopled spirit-world, which he has evolved in his reach after the universal soul-heritage of mankind—the somewhat beyond and outside of himself and his own world. These spirits of his are mostly of a devilish kind, and the marvel is that, with the belief that he is himself continually the object of their malevolent attentions, he can have a moment's peace of mind. It speaks for his naturally easy-going temperament that he is able, despite his hobgoblin environment, to maintain his buoy-

<sup>1</sup>Palaver is a general term and is used with broad meaning. It may signify a monologue, an ordinary conversation, a quarrel, a public discussion; in fact, anything which permits of talk.

ancy and be the happy, free-hearted child of nature that he is.

It is a precarious life that the African leads. Doubtless he never moralizes upon it. His horizon is bounded by tribal limits. If he goes beyond them, it is apt to be upon an errand of war, in which, with bow and arrows, club, knife, spear, or battleax, he helps to add to the list of deaths by violence with which the continent is cursed. For it is a fact that human life is held so cheap that from birth to death the native runs the gauntlet of sudden violent death, death by torture, or by slow poison. Various superstitions, and the specific institutions of witchcraft, human sacrifice, cannibalism, and slavery, all add their quota to the frightful death rate. Aside from these are the vast numbers who die from contagion, a natural sequence of life in barbarism. Lack of proper care causes the deaths of multitudes of infants. The number of deaths among children from tetanus alone is believed to reach an enormous figure. Complete statistics are, of course, not available. Figures on the death rates, from whatever cause, can be approximate only.

**Cheapness of Life**

An African baby, then, takes its life in **Infanticide**

its hands, so to speak, when it makes its advent into the world. If it has some physical peculiarity, or if its coming be unwelcome (especially apt to be the case if it be a girl), it will as likely as not be thrown into the bush, or be put to death in some less heartless way. Ill luck is believed to accompany deformity, yet good fortune does not always attend upon an infant physically sound, for such a one is sometimes buried alive with its dead mother. Conflicting ideas control the disposal of twins. Among some tribes they are invariably put to death. In 1902, a native of Rhodesia (within the bounds of civilization) roasted alive her own twin babies. Some tribes regard the birth of twins as auspicious. During a child's early months certain unwritten rules regulate its development. If, perchance, it cuts its upper front teeth first, its life may pay the forfeit for such precocity.<sup>1</sup>

#### **Babyhood**

Little ones who have succeeded in passing the entrance requirements to life probably receive as much attention as babies

<sup>1</sup>Specific illustrations of customs given in this chapter are representative only. They are not to be thought of as universal throughout the continent. Some of them are universal; most of them are so widespread among various tribes as to be reckoned among characteristic customs.

born into such an uncertain sort of a world need. But there is little inclination to outward demonstrations of affection, or, for that matter, to chastisement either. Child life is much the same in any part of Africa. Until the child is able to walk, he is carried upon his mother's back in her frequent journeys to and from the little farm beyond the village. As soon as he can manage his own short legs, he walks with her, and when he can steady a load upon his small head he may help in the burden-bearing of her life. While his mother is at work, Mother Nature is his nurse and playmate, and all of the big out-of-doors is his nursery. He acquires keenness of discernment between the good and the evil of edibles which he can pick up, pluck, or catch, and he makes the practical acquaintance of certain kinds of live animal food at which the well brought up civilized child would scream.

A boy thus unrestrained grows lustily in strength and stature, if not in grace. By and by he learns to fashion bows and arrows, to hunt for small game, to fish, and otherwise to follow his manward bent. A girl continues to spend her time with her mother at the farm and about the hut,

**Boyhood and  
Girlhood**

learning the rather varied house-wifely duties that fall to the lot of African women. Marriage is looked forward to as an inevitable part of life. Betrothals of very little girls are not uncommon.

**“Bush Schools”**

The period of childhood is limited. In many tribes, before the boys and girls reach their teens—sometimes as early as eight or ten years of age—they are sent to the “bush-schools.” These bush-schools are conducted in the bush<sup>1</sup> or the forest. They are not co-educational, and their instruction, which is secret, is imparted to each sex, respectively, by a man or a woman versed in their lore. An outsider discovered near their place of meeting is summarily dealt with. That the moral tone of these institutions is of the lowest there can be no doubt. But it is known that, with all the evil, the pupils acquire a little helpful knowledge—the medicinal uses of herbs, for instance. Whatever the training, it is intended, from the African’s viewpoint of the standards of life, to be a preparation for manhood and womanhood, and

<sup>1</sup>“The bush,” as the term is sometimes used, includes almost any part of the out-of-door world. Specifically, as in the case of the “bush-schools,” it is applied to the actual bush—the scrubby growth of the savannahs, or the undergrowth of the forest, or even to the forest itself.



for the serious duties which must soon devolve upon the pupils. After a period spent in these schools (the time varies in different tribes from a month to two years), the children return to their villages to enter upon "grown-up" life.

Marriage is likely to be contracted in early years. It is considered the end and aim of a girl's existence, and she only waits for some one to buy her. Often her husband is much older than herself, for a boy must postpone marriage until he has acquired enough in the way of earthly possessions to barter for a wife. The bride is always acquired by barter. She is worth so many goats or cows, so many yards of cloth, or so much of some other commodity, the number or quantity being agreed upon between the would-be husband and the father of the bride. The exchange of goods for a girl is sufficient to constitute the latter a wife without further ado, but there is, ordinarily, some sort of a ceremony attending her transference to her new home. One custom involves a mimic struggle between the friends of the groom and those of the bride, the latter feigning to defend her from abduction. This play invariably concludes with triumph for the groom's party,

#### Marriage

who bear the bride away. A few days of noisy celebration—eating, drinking, dancing—ensue, and then the new wife again resumes the round of drudgery to which her childhood training and the traditions regarding woman's place in the economy of life have accustomed her. She is wholly subservient to her husband; and in a measure to the head wife, unless she herself happens to be the first.

#### Wives

Polygamy is commonly practiced. The number of wives which a man possesses must obviously be limited by his ability to purchase. Yet men of means do use discretion in this department of their household expenditures. If there appears to be danger that the bounds of social propriety will be overstepped, public sentiment may decide as to when a man is sufficiently married. It is said that the king of Ashanti, in the days of his wealth and glory before the coming of the British, was limited to 3,333 wives! On the other hand, another West African king was required to have not less than thirty wives. Usually, however, a half dozen serve very well to demonstrate a man's dignity and his standing in the community. If a wife displeases her husband, he may under certain conditions

return her to her parents and demand restitution of the "head-money."<sup>1</sup> There are also extreme cases where the wife may leave the husband. He then can recover no damages. Separations are not as common as might be thought probable where marriage is purely a matter of bargain. So long as his wives follow his behests and give him enough to eat, the husband is content. If they quarrel, he shouts at them. If they are unruly, he has recourse to more effective measures. As for the woman, one hut is as good as another, the drudgery is the same anywhere, and unless he is very cruel, the husband she has is not worse than another might be. In her way she is devoted to him, and he is sometimes fond of her. Still, there is little of genuine love as civilized people know it. With all his wives the African has no home. Polygamy is the source of innumerable jealousies and quarrels. It sometimes leads to murder of the husband or of a rival wife's children. It leads almost universally to unfaithfulness in the marriage relation.

The children of the various mothers together form a considerable family; separated, each group ordinarily is not large.

**Children**

<sup>1</sup>"Head-money" is the price paid for a wife.

African babyhood has too many pitfalls to allow of large families. If a wife has no children she is held in dishonor. The children of a free wife belong to her and to her relatives. Those of a slave wife belong to the husband.

#### Slaves

Aside from his wives and children, a man's household may include slaves. His wives not only may be his slaves, but all of his female slaves may be his concubines. Domestic slavery, degrading to morals, unfair to the rights of man, and cruel as it often is in its practice, cannot be said, taken all in all, to be the unmitigated curse to the continent that foreign slavery has been. Because of less demand for heavy labor, the hardships connected with it are not as severe as among more civilized peoples. The freedom of a slave is not greatly restricted and it is possible for him to accumulate property of his own. But the utter disregard for human life in Pagan Africa makes the slave wholly dependent upon his master's caprice for his very existence. Punishment, as a matter of course, may be meted out to him at the slightest provocation.

#### Family Ties

It is plain that, with so many separate elements comprising it, there can be no

close personal elements binding the family. Except for the central figure, the husband, for whom everybody over whom he has control is supposed to exist, there is no family life in common. Each wife has her own hut, where she and her children live apart, a family within a family. The father is apt to pay little attention to his children after their baby days. This lack of care for them possibly may be traced to the odd custom which causes inheritance to pass from father to sister's son, instead of from father to son. Between mother and children, and especially between mother and son, there is some exchange of love. Hundreds of natives who find their way—a thousand miles sometimes—from their homes in the interior to the mines of South Africa stay only long enough to accumulate a small sum in wages—wealth to them—and then trudge back over the roadless distance to their homes. Extended absence from friends, even though new ones are made among other laborers, renders them restless and eager once more to be among the wild surroundings of their native haunts. Perhaps heart-hunger for the old free life impels the return. Perhaps the family relations are closer than the observer deems them

to be. Perhaps mother-love, not unlike the world over, draws these wanderers back.

**Family Responsibility**

With all its looseness of connection, the family has cohesive features. All of the members may be held responsible for the reprehensible conduct of one. Here the African's sense of honor is displayed. If an injured person demand reparation, his requirements must be met by the family of the offender. One consequence of such a custom is the development of a measure of clannishness. Neighborliness to the extent of helpfulness is therefore oftentimes limited. A motherless baby may wail its little life away within the hearing of other mothers. They have children, too many of them it may be. Besides, have they not themselves sometimes disposed of their own babies if unwelcome? This orphaned one may die. They feel neither the pathos nor the cruelty of it all.

**Man's Domain**

The abiding-places of the collective family—the huts—are, for the purpose of centralization, usually built around a plot of ground, the whole area forming a sort of compound. Over this little domain man, as a superior being, is lord and master. His subjects are his wives, his slaves, his children, and whatever other live stock

he may possess. In family affairs his is the controlling genius. If there are no slaves, his wives, who are in reality little above the grade of slaves, do all the work connected with the immediate family necessities which it is possible for him to avoid. They must come and go at his beck and call. They must serve his meals in his own hut, but not eat with him. They must smooth life's path for him while keeping themselves ever in the background. In a word, they must make a great man of him generally, no matter what the cost to them.

This condition is not so much an evidence of man's greater disinclination to toil, as it is of the almost universal estimate placed upon woman outside of Christian lands. She is of the inferior sex. She is the tool of man. Her energy, such as it is—for her duties require little haste—leaves him free for a less restricted life. He eats, drinks, lounges, goes hunting, fishing, and warring if necessary, and—palavers. A cool evening, a screen of reeds set up to protect him from a possible chilling breeze, a palaver-fire, around which he may sit and spin yarns with other men of the village—this is bliss. Yet, when conditions demand, the African man can work, and work hard. In-

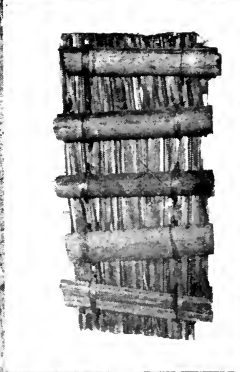
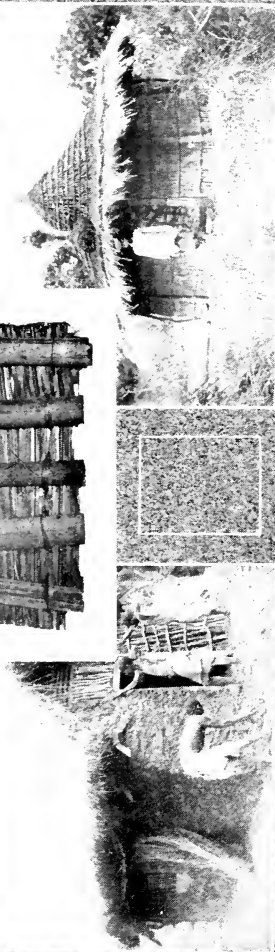
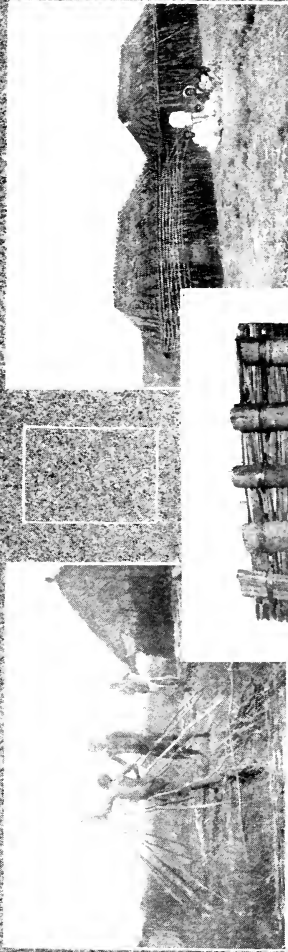
**Man's Disinclination to Toil**

dustries multiply with wants, division of labor increases in proportion, and the masculine element of the race must share in the division. The civilizing agency of industry has a more far-reaching effect with the male population than with the female. The man has a broader chasm of idleness to span. The woman has always toiled.

**The Simple  
Life in Native  
Huts**

The African's solution of the "simple life" problem unwittingly lightens woman's burdens. So far as housekeeping pure and simple is concerned there is not much of a house to keep. The characteristic hut is a rude affair. Poles, set up in close order for a framework, are plastered with mud. A thatch of leaves or grass serves for shingles. A small opening, so low that one must stoop to enter, does duty for both door and window. That is all. No chimney is built. The smoke from fire required for cooking or for occasional warmth eventually finds its way through the dried grasses of the roof. Neither is an artificial floor necessary. The natural floor of earth is quite good enough. Furniture of any description is almost unheard of. A woven grass mat provides a bed. It is soft enough for mattress and warm enough for cover-





# VARIOUS METHODS OF CONSTRUCTING NATIVE HUTS

POLES FOR THE ROOF  
COMPLETING THE MUD WALLS

DETAIL OF THATCH-WORK

FRAME-WORK  
ROOFING WITH GRASS



ing. Other furniture would hamper the daily routine.

Meals are not functions. They may be taken indoors or out, reclining, sitting or walking, whensoever or wheresoever individual hunger prompts. If there be a cooked dish, the cooking vessel is portable. At any rate, there are always one's hands. And what are hands for, if not to perform a go-between service at mealtime? Fruits and vegetables are so abundant that the native lives largely upon them. Bananas, pawpaws, dates, mangoes, sour-sops, guavas, plantains, yams, cassava, millet seed, rice, and maize are either native to Africa or are easily cultivated. Cassava, yams, rice, and plantains are staples of diet. They are nourishing as well as delicious foods. In grazing districts, where small herds are kept, cattle and goats furnish an occasional meat diet. Game and fish are always relished. Ants, gnats and locusts are by no means lacking in appetizing flavor. They are so numerous as to be readily collected, and are prepared as a sort of croquette. Palm-oil serves for fat in cooking. The more of it, the more palatable the dish. Native beer and palm-wine are favorite beverages, and, in some

#### Native Food

sections, milk. The liquors usually are intoxicating and work havoc among tipplers.

#### **Native Dress**

Dress is another feature of the simple life as demonstrated by the African. Again the woman is the gainer. She spends no long days at stitching, no weary hours at laundering, no protracted moments at the mirror. Dress is not a requirement of African society. Some tribes do habitually cover the body, although over large portions of the continent garments, as a protection against cold, are unnecessary. In most of interior Africa little or nothing is worn. A loin-cloth of bark, or leaves, or grass suffices. A long cloth, or the skin of an animal, may be donned on ceremonious occasions.

#### **Personal Adornment**

Because of this slightness of clothing, much time and attention are devoted to charms more strictly personal. A full figure is deemed the most perfect; hence, gain in flesh is a point of pride. Among some upper Nile tribes, who use milk freely, the results of the striving toward this standard of beauty are sometimes astonishing. Tattooing is the fashion among many tribes. Forehead, cheeks, chin, and chest present suitable surfaces upon which the fancies of the designer may be etched. Red ochre is

streaked on the black faces, making an effective color combination. Ears, nose and lips are pierced or otherwise mutilated to permit the wearing of huge copper rings. This ornamentation is supplemented by numerous neck, arm, and ankle rings. The anklets are often so weighty as seriously to impede movement. Necklaces are made from the teeth of animals. Among cannibal tribes teeth of men may be used for this same purpose.

It is in hairdressing, however, that real triumphs are achieved. Here the vanity of man outrivals that of woman. Every conceivable mode that grotesque ideas of beauty can conjure up is in vogue. The head is shaved, hair cut in fantastic patterns, arranged in ridges, or trained out to a hoop encircling the head like an aureole. The woolly mass is usually rendered manageable by a free use of oil, and any desired arrangement may be temporarily fixed with a mud plaster.

**Hair-Dressing**

Woman's domain includes not only her hut, but much of out-of-doors as well, a condition somewhat detrimental to the fine art of homemaking. Notwithstanding the ease with which she keeps her house and clothes herself and her family, she is kept

**Woman's  
Domain**

busy. She must prepare the ground for seed-sowing, must plant, cultivate, and harvest the crops, and carry home and to the village market (where there is one) the heavy baskets of vegetables. She must be the miller if grain is to be ground. She must be the potter if crockery is desired. She must bring the wood and the water for cooking, and prepare the meals for her family. A little merrymaking—a village dance, a wedding, a celebration when yams are ripe—now and then adds zest, but at best she is a drudge.

#### Deaths and Funerals

The ceremonies attendant upon deaths and funerals also break the monotony of life. Scarcely anything is done to alleviate the sufferings of the dying. Instead, the tom-tom<sup>1</sup> keeps up an incessant beating, and the assembled relatives dance about and utter wild cries in the attempt to frighten away the evil spirit which is believed to be causing the illness. Amidst such riotous confusion death must come as a welcome relief. Feasting, drinking, and carousing make the funeral an occasion of general debauch. Noise, too often the African's conception of music, has, as in pub-

<sup>1</sup>The tom-tom (a drum) is a favorite musical instrument.

lie celebrations of whatever character, a large part in the last rites.

The hut serves one other purpose than those suggested. It is often a burial place for a member of the family. Regardless of the character of the disease—contagious or otherwise—which has caused death, interment is often made under its earthen floor. A shallow grave is dug and the body is laid away with as much pomp and display as the social standing of the family demands.<sup>1</sup> Belongings of the deceased, together with food and drink, are buried with him. Hut-burial is not universal, yet it is rather widely in favor. Where practiced it may be simply as a time-honored custom, although it possibly originated in the thought of protecting the body from desecration by witches or by cannibal ghouls, or of keeping the spirit in close association with its dwelling while in the body, or as a matter of convenience to the living in their sacrifice to the spirit of the departed. Any one of these reasons for the gruesome practice would to the native mind be a valid one. In coast lands, however,

#### Hut Burial

<sup>1</sup>W. Holman Bentley, *Pioneering on the Congo*, observes that in the Congo basin hut burial is but a temporary expedient, re-interment taking place when the family can afford an elaborate funeral.

foreign control, with small regard for ancestral bones, is stamping out a custom so unsanitary.

#### **Tribal Life**

Family life is typical of tribal life, tribal life of national life—national, that is, in the sense of a number of tribes under the authority of the strongest. Village, tribal, national life center in petty king or sub-chief, head king or paramount chief, somewhat as family life centers in the husband. There is a difference, however. Kings and chiefs rule over limited monarchies, the head men being the counsellors. Laws are unwritten, but are nevertheless formulated and crystallized in public sentiment. They are savage, but not always unjust. Witch-palavers, and secret societies organized for the purpose, enforce them. The methods of enforcement are so entangled with superstitions that insecurity of life and property results. This fact undoubtedly accounts, to a considerable extent, for lack of stability in the possession of property. Property is all personal. Real estate is nominally at the disposal of the chief, who, as head of the tribe, may allot it among his people. But there is no title to land and no pretense at ownership, except by squatter sovereignty—actual residence. Huts



are of such simple construction, and personal effects are so few, that change of residence represents scarcely any financial loss and but a slight expenditure of energy. Better land, better water supply, or even a quarrel may furnish cause for removal. A fresh site may be settled upon without opposition from any quarter, provided it has no prior resident. The fact that families and even whole villages can be, and are, transferred to new locations is indicative of the lack of permanency in African civil affairs.

The African, as he appears before civilization brings either its detrimental or its beneficial influence to bear on him, is exceedingly primitive. He has scarcely any aims beyond the securing of food and scanty clothing. Crafty toward a foe, he is exceedingly loyal to a friend, especially to a loved superior. The devotion of Susi and Chuma to Livingstone (even after his death when they imperiled their own lives in taking his body to the coast) is representative of the African. Self-important and arrogant in the consciousness of any advantage over another, he is obsequious and craven when the tables are turned. Under the influence of Pagan religion he is

**An Estimate of  
the African**

cruel to the point of being callous to the sufferings of others. In the person of the "uncle" and "mammy" of the civilized household he is full of sympathetic tenderheartedness. Unambitious for what he does not have, he is readily susceptible to vanity over slight acquisitions. Indolent in his native home of prodigal fertility, his latent industry responds to proper incentive to so remarkable a degree that he becomes the type of patient, burden-bearing humanity. The African is precocious when young, imitative and teachable always. Right example and incentive influence him as perhaps no other race of man.

**Corrupt  
Civilization**

The temptations of corrupt civilization awaiting the African's untaught, savage self are legion. Doors open both ways to the pliable and teachable. Opportunities for the development of sturdy manhood are more elusive and less in the line of African nature. Just here is the sufficient answer to every critic of missions, who, insisting that the native is happy and that the introduction of Christianity unnecessarily disturbs him, declares that he should be left to his savage, Pagan life. The fact is that civilization, while blessing, also curses Africa. As represented by the liquor traffic,

social vice, and trade in firearms, for instance, it is even more detrimental than Pagan customs. Yet this type of civilization is in Africa to stay and to spread. No well-informed Christian can doubt that the African is in sore need of a Saviour, but, were there no other reason, it is evident that Christianity is necessary in order to forearm the primitive native in Africa against the evils from Christian lands.

---

#### QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER II.

AIM: TO STUDY THE NEED OF AFRICAN SOCIETY FOR CHRISTIANITY.

*I...On the basis of the number unreached.*

- 1 From a religious standpoint, how is the population of Africa divided?
- 2 How many adherents in round numbers are there of each religion?
- 3 How are they distributed geographically?
- 4 What is the total Christian population of Africa?
- 5 What proportion is this of the whole?
- 6 What part of this will be no help in evangelizing the continent?
- 7 What can you say that is good of the Copts and Abyssinians?
- 8\* In what ways does the Sudan seem to be a strategic position?
- 9\* What is the need of Africa on the basis of those unreached by the gospel as compared with North America?

## 72 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

II...*In view of the character of African paganism.*

- 10 First picture clearly the African in his lazy, brutal life, and then consider what Christianity will do for him.
- 11\* What parables of Christ will furnish him with an incentive to effort?
- 12 How will the belief in a loving Father affect his fear of spirits?
- 13 What teachings of Christ will show him the need of mercy and goodness towards others?
- 14\* Try to imagine yourself an African pagan and to think how these things would seem to you when heard for the first time.
- 15 What will Christ's words teach him as to the value of little children?
- 16\* Tell some of the ways in which the life of little black children will be different after Christianity controls their parents.
- 17\* What are some of the things that Christianity will do for the African wife?
- 18\* Read the Epistle to Philemon and decide what Christianity will do for the African slave.
- 19\* How will African family life be changed by the introduction of the family meal, which is peculiar to Christianity?
- 20 How would Christianity teach the African to feel towards men of another tribe?
- 21\* Sum up the teachings of Christ that the African most needs.
- 22\* Sum up the greatest evils that now exist for lack of these teachings.
- 23 In view of the nature and possibilities of the African, to which of these teachings do you think he will most quickly respond?
- 24\* What is the need of personal contact of the missionary with the native in Africa as compared with other fields?

## Dark Peoples and Their Customs 73

- 25 What is the call to the Church in view of the ready response of the African to influence and example?

### III...*In view of the rapid advance of civilization.*

- 26 In what ways has the African been benefited by civilization?
- 27\* What do you consider the greatest blessing that mere civilization has brought to him?
- 28 What will it fail to do for him?
- 29\* In what ways will it be a positive evil without Christianity?
- 30 What is the call to the Church in view of the rapid advance of civilization into Africa?
- 

### REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

#### I...Native Characteristics.

- Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, Chs. VIII, X.
- Drummond—Tropical Africa, Ch. III.
- Elmslie—Among the Wild Ngoni, Ch. III.
- Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, Ch. II.
- Nassau—Fetichism in West Africa, Ch. I.
- Vincent—Actual Africa, Ch. XLIX.

#### II...Cannibals and Dwarfs.

- DuChaillu—Equatorial Africa and Country of the Dwarfs, Chs. VII, XXXV.
- Stanley—Through the Dark Continent, Vol. II, pp. 200, 210, 224, 233, 266, 274.
- Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, Ch. XXI.
- Ward—Five Years with the Congo Cannibals, Pt. II, Ch. III.

## 74 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

### III...Animals and Insects.

Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, Ch. III.

Drummond—Tropical Africa, Chs. VI, VII.

DuChaillu—Equatorial Africa and Country of the  
Dwarfs, Chs. XX, XXII.

Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, Ch.  
VIII.

James—The Wild Tribes of Sudan, Ch. XXVI.

Tyler—Forty Years Among the Zulus, Chs. IX, X.

## A RELIGION OF DARKNESS

Hast thou seen what [they] do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? . . . Hast thou seen this? Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations than these.

EZEKIEL viii: 12, 15.



### III

#### A RELIGION OF DARKNESS

AFRICAN Paganism or Fetichism<sup>1</sup> is a religion of darkness. Its prayers are petitions for mercy and imprecations upon enemies, rather than praise and thanksgiving. Its gods are malignant. Love for them is unknown. Hope, in the Christian sense, an anchor to the soul both sure and steadfast, is foreign to Pagan thought. The African conceives himself as beset behind and before, above and below, by innumerable ill-tempered spirits, all, with one accord, consciously and constantly attempting to frustrate his endeavors, and all seeking his injury and death. He thinks that deceased relatives covet his company in "Deadland," and for some time after death lurk about their old haunts with

**African  
Paganism**

<sup>1</sup>Paganism is treated as the religion of Africa, because it is not imported as is Islamism, but is native to the continent. Fetichism, from *feitico*, a charm or amulet, since its introduction by the pious charm-peddling Portuguese priests of 400 years ago, has absorbed most of the Pagan ideas of spirits, charms, images, religious ceremonies, ceremonial garments, etc. The term Fetichism is therefore used by many when referring to African Paganism.

snarcs of disease and violence. It is believed that admiration and love prompt these sinister attentions. A favorite wife or child lives in constant fear of the summons of the dead husband or father to accompany him to the nether world. But no fine sentimentality deters the African from vigorous protest against this method by which he thinks his departed relatives show their love. A dream, for instance, is supposed to be the actual experience of the soul of the dreamer with the subject of the dream; hence, blood-curdling curses are practiced in order that they may be hurled at the devoted shade should he appear in a dream.

**Everything  
Effected by  
Spirits**

Furthermore, indwelling, conscious spirits are attributed to every natural object, animate and inanimate. Plants, trees, fountains, rivers, lakes, rocks, cliffs, mountains, fish, reptiles, birds, animals, are to the native Pagan African the possessors of self-conscious, self-directing spirits. Therefore, any accident is supposed by the African to be due to the anger or the caprice of spirits. He knows no accidents. Everything is intended and is effected by some rational being.

**Multiplication  
of Spirits**

The spirit-world is still further multi-

plied by applying the same reasoning to the mysterious forces of nature—lightning, thunder, wind, rain, the atmosphere, and all space—and by investing them with evil spirits. The African moreover imagines that the spirits are arrayed in an infernal league against him. The darkness of night cannot hide him from them, nor can the blaze of tropical noonday insure him against their invisible intrigues.

To these spirits are proffered sacrifices of varying value, for the purpose of placating their anger or of purchasing their assistance. The offering may consist of a straw or shell picked up at random as one passes some place where a spirit has supposedly revealed its presence. A runner will pause to add a pebble to the pile on a log that has fallen across the path, or to thrust a twig into the rent of a tree that has been struck by lightning. By such recognition he hopes to avoid personal violence from spirits of such manifest power.

Regular sacrifices may range from a morsel of meal, or a few drops of water, to the slaughter of animals and human beings. The self-mutilation of the Bushman reveals the idea of deeper personal cost. The exact motive in cutting off one or more

**Sacrifices**

**Personal Cost  
of Sacrifice**

joints from the fingers of the left hand has never been distinctly learned from the reticent little yellow people. Yet even if it is now simply an expression of mourning, as some imagine, it probably originated in the thought of sacrifice, and is closely akin to it. For, aside from the enjoyment of the thing offered, the spirits fiendishly gloat over the suffering and deprivation which the sacrifices cost their devotees.

#### Charms

To procure the aid of spirits charms are used. In order to be effective the charm must be composed of material which is peculiarly pleasing to the spirit whose good offices are solicited. A vile concoction of carrion, portions of the human body—particularly eyeballs, for which graves are rifled—are among the most valued ingredients. The teeth of the lion or leopard are highly prized. The owner of a charm thinks that he is protected and assisted by the spirit of the charm, and, since the thought life has much to do with the practical life, charms do help the African. Hung up in the hut or field, a charm guards the property of the owner better than a dozen slaves. The slaves themselves are not proof against theft. The charm not only cannot steal, but the sight of it, or the

knowledge of its presence, fills the would-be thief with fearful forebodings. He possibly could evade the vigilance and escape the pursuit of human watchmen, but he thinks that to ignore the guardianship of a charm is absolutely certain to bring upon him the direst personal consequences.

Charms are commonly worn upon the body to protect from disease or violence. The spirit of the charm is invoked against the spirits of the air, nature, animals and men. That the wearer of a charm falls sick, suffers injury from accident, or is killed in battle, does not disturb confidence in the practical effectiveness of charms. On the contrary, it is stoically and naïvely explained that the spirit has been offered some other charm of greater attractiveness, or that a stronger spirit has overcome it.

**Charms Worn**

If the wearer has outlived the power of his charm, he returns it for repairs to the fetich-doctor from whom he originally purchased it. This shrewd rascal usually finds that the charm is all right, but that it does not like the owner, and must therefore be replaced by another and of course more expensive one. The deluded customer haggles and tries to compromise on the price,

**Repairing Charms**

but ends by purchasing. He trusts tremblingly in the new charm, until its power, too, is disproved, then buys another; and so the farce goes on indefinitely. Faith in the ability to bribe the favor of one or more spirits is seldom lost.

**Spirits and  
Gods**

In the African's thought, all spirits are related. He does not draw fine distinctions between spirits and gods. The terms are interchangeable. He conceives them, together with man, as part of one great whole—a continuous line of conscious beings, ranging from the lowest water sprite, through all the intervening nature spirits, human spirits, and spirits wholly independent of matter, up to the supreme God. The various members of the series, excepting possibly the last, differ not in kind but in degree. The relation between animal and human spirits indicates the essential kinship of all. A deceased ancestor may return in the form of a serpent or elephant or other animal. In some sections of the continent every person is supposed to have a second individuality resident in some animal in the bush. It seems that the higher spirits are only further evolutions of nature spirits and ancestral spirits. This is no denial that the African, in common with

all men, has an inborn idea of God. It simply indicates the inevitable consequence when the natural soul-reach after God is perverted and corrupted.

The gods are divided into four main classes—general gods, worshiped by various tribes over large sections of country; tribal gods, which have no recognition beyond the limits of their respective tribes; family gods, each for its particular family; and individual gods, each the sole property of a particular person.

**Classes of Gods**

Any Pagan, fearful lest the family, tribal, and general deities be too preoccupied to give adequate attention to his personal affairs, may secure a rude image secretly from a priest, or may himself carve one. Gruesome and noisome rites dedicate this as the abode of some god. The underlying idea of charms and images is that spirits must have some tangible object to work through, just as the spirit of man has the body. These individual gods have nothing to do but to advance the interests of their respective worshipers. Since the Pagan has so many interests that are hostile to the property and life of his neighbors, and since the gods chosen for individual worship are ordinarily dedicated to revenge

**Individual  
Gods**

and violence, and since anyone who sets about the injury of another in so pious a manner as to devote a god to that end usually effects his purposes, the possessor of an individual god is much feared. In some quarters priests and witch-doctors are forbidden to make them, and any one apprehended in the possession of an individual god may be put to death. But the priests secretly continue to make the forbidden images, and thus secure a power over their patrons, upon whom they may inform without danger to themselves.

#### **Family Gods**

The family also desires the sole attention of some one god. Even though it were feasible for each member to have an individual god, the family as a unit has interests of sufficient scope to occupy the undivided favor of a god of family caliber. The family god is often represented by a little image and shrine in a niche of the hut. There is no ban upon any except individual gods. It seems to be recognized that publicity lessens the liability of crime. The African is very suspicious of anything that is the exclusive secret of one person.

#### **Tribal Gods**

Reasons similar to the foregoing justify to the Pagan his tribal gods. The tribe as a unit needs the services of gods of



greater potency than the sum of power possessed by all family gods, and while such power may not approach that of great general deities, the entire attention of even a small god may mean much when the general god is on a journey, or asleep, or concerned with other matters. The tribal god may have one or more shrines, many images or none.<sup>1</sup>

The Pagan fancies that the concern of the gods in earthly affairs is in inverse ratio to the importance of the gods. The great general deities are believed to be more indifferent to human interests than are tribal and family gods. Still, so much greater powers are attributed to general gods that their attention to any important matter is much valued. They come into particular prominence in crises of war, famine, and pestilence. Except on such occasions they are disregarded. They are so far away and so indifferent to men that

#### General Gods

<sup>1</sup>The African is far less dependent upon images and has fewer of them than some peoples of much higher religious conceptions in other respects. He seems capable of grasping the thought of spiritual beings without the aid of tangible objects. He clears himself from the charge of dependence upon charms and images, when he does employ them, by the plea that the spirits and gods delight in them or require them as fulcrums with which to effect results in this world of sense.

they take no account of the ordinary routine of life. Why should man pay any attention to them except in times of extraordinary stress? Possibly then they will hear! Thus does the Pagan excuse his neglect of worship of the greater gods of his demoniacal household.

**Gods are  
Demons**

Nearly all of the Pagan's gods are demons, and demons without any disguise to cover their hideousness. The cruel barbarities of the Pagan do not necessarily spring from an inborn brutality of nature, but from his ideas of gods and religion. His gods are overgrown savages, reveling in drunkenness, debauchery, vicious immoralities, obscene orgies. As raving lions they go about seeking whom they may devour. Characteristic titles for the gods are "The Hater," "Malignancy," "Producer of Calamities." Occasionally a benevolent deity may be found in the African's theology, but if so it may be assumed that its benevolence is indifferent rather than active. The idea may arise because accidents have become less frequent in the locality ascribed to a given god, and the god in question is therefore supposed to have grown less malignant. Such a deity is apt to be quickly forgotten, for the African in-

separably connects his gods with the thought of danger and violence.

The ascending series represented by individual, family, tribal, and general gods is continued indefinitely under the last named class. Above and back of the best known and most worshiped general gods are others. Back of them are still others, although not so many in each succeeding stage of less known and more indifferent deities. On and on the mind may continue to flounder in darkness that becomes palpable.

**Ascending  
Series of Gods**

There are hopeful gleams of truth in all this wandering of the black philosopher. It is in his conception of general deities that he reveals ability to think of spirits existing and operating apart from matter, uncreated intelligences which are not made, nor born, nor evolved, but are self-existent, or as he puts it, "do it all themselves."

**Gleams of  
Truth**

It must also be recognized that, in the midst of this maze of intervening spirits, there is an ever narrowing circle in respect to number, an inevitable push toward unity. One might despair lest the idea of one god, as the common heritage of man, had been utterly lost, and that there would be

**Push toward  
Unity**

little or nothing to build Christian conceptions upon. The idea is there, notwithstanding. Though crowded to the outskirts of recognition, God the Eternal figures in the hazy background of Pagan theology. Some of the most pathetic experiences of missionaries occur in attempts to clear the Pagan mind of the vague mystification concerning deity. They must overcome indifference to God and introduce an adequate idea of the nature of Him who wishes to act directly with every person without any intervening spirits. To brains so long befogged by words without knowledge it is a difficult task. "I think I know what you mean," said an African girl, after days of questioning as to whether she knew anything of God. "It is something great, and passes on the water far away."<sup>1</sup> The name she gave was that used for deity throughout a large section of Central Africa. Others apparently limp backward in their thought, slowly, laboriously, beyond family, tribal, and general gods, as if the idea were only a faint race memory, and that all but lost, to the "Old, Old One." But still the idea of God, not simply of spirits and gods, but of God himself, is there.

<sup>1</sup>W. Holman Bentley. *Pioneering on the Congo*.

It is a fact of tremendous significance that despite the centuries of the Pagan's blind groping after demoniacal spirits, despite the barbarities with which his daily life has abounded for generation upon generation, despite the "abnormal folds of animalism" with which it is covered, the idea of God persists, and is capable of revival and enlargement. Some missionaries find a distinct conception of the existence of the supreme God. Dr. Robert Nassau, after forty years of missionary service in Africa, says that he has never been asked, "Who is God?" He has never met any one who did not understand at once the distinction between God and all other gods, however great. "He is the All-Father," his auditors would invariably say. "He made these trees, that mountain, this river, these goats and chickens, and us people." But in common with all others, this venerable missionary has also found that they have little more than the name for God and the meager knowledge that he made all things. They know nothing of his love, his benevolence, his impartial justice, his infinite and intimate concern for every man. "Yes, he made us, but having made us, he is far from us. Why should we care for him?"

**Idea of God  
Persistent**

**Conception of  
One God**

He does not help nor harm us. It is the spirits who can harm us, whom we fear and worship, and for whom we care.”<sup>1</sup>

**Promise of a  
New Man**

When to the Pagan’s knowledge of God’s name is added an appreciation of his character, there is the promise of a new man. Often there is nothing more than the promise. Some so-called converts are most superficial, as is the case in every mission field, and the missionaries who understand the native character are constantly on the alert lest those who are spiritually unprepared should be received into the church. Christianity is frequently professed because of the real or supposed material advantages such profession assures. Moreover, the thought of one God of love is more attractive than the idea of innumerable and malignant gods. Still one may welcome the thought without experiencing a change of heart. It should be said, however, that the African truly born again as Christ taught Nicodemus the way, is as humble and exemplary a follower of Christ as one could wish.

**Human  
Sacrifices**

The African’s religious philosophy results in various grotesque and barbarous practices. His justification of human sac-

<sup>1</sup>R. H. Nassau. *Fetichism in West Africa*.

rifice is strictly religious. Since ordinary sacrifice is necessary to keep the gods in good temper under ordinary circumstances, the offering of men and women is essential on occasions of great moment. The frequent slaughter of scores of human beings at a time, so recently prohibited by the English occupation of Ashanti, was inspired by very pious motives—to supply the needs of the gods, avert their vengeance, and win their favor.

Accompanying the thought that life in “Deadland” is a shadow of life above ground, the Pagan thinks that the shades of chiefs and ancestors must also have with them the shades of slaves, wives, and warriors. So human sacrifice has its manward as well as its godward side. The idea that men carry their loves and hates, their ambitions and endeavors, beyond the grave, means that the shades are striving for the same ends and fighting the same battles with the shades of their tribal enemies as occupy their living friends with enemies in the body. The conception of the power of spirits over earthly affairs is, therefore, a keen incentive to furnish the dead of a tribe with sufficient fresh recruits to overcome any possible acquisition that may

**Deadland is  
the Shadow of  
Life**

have come to the spirit army of the tribe's enemies.

#### **Burial Alive**

The burial alive of the wives of a chief with his dead body is the first installment of this phase of human sacrifice. Several wives are laid upon the floor of the burial pit, and across their living bodies the corpse is extended, with the head reclining in the arms of the favorite wife. A slave kneels at the feet, presenting to the dead chief his pipe, tobacco, spear and battle-ax. After the earth has been filled in over the living and the dead, slaves may be slaughtered upon the newly made grave. After several subsequent sacrifices have been offered in honor of the spirit of the deceased, it is not surprising that his spirit is sometimes deified.

#### **Messages to the Dead**

Messages to the dead are a natural sequence of the idea of their continued interest in worldly matters. Those dying natural deaths are sometimes asked to carry these messages. But a case may seem too urgent to wait for some one to die. So the message is repeated to a slave until he understands it perfectly, his head is struck off before he can forget it, and his spirit is sent on the dark mission. If something further relating to the message is thought



of, a postscript<sup>1</sup> is added by despatching a second slave in the same manner.

Cannibalism in Africa is another of the inhuman practices that have grown out of native religion. It is believed by careful authorities to have originated as a sacrificial feast. It is certainly connected with the theory that everything possesses spirit and that every occurrence is the result of the action of spirit upon spirit. For instance, it is thought that food strengthens, not, as we would say, by the process of assimilation, but by the spirit of the food being appropriated by the spirit of the body. Warriors mutilate the bodies of the slain, and either eat or make charms of bits that are believed best to represent the life principle, because they hope to make the spirit of the victim their own. Dr. Duff MacDonald<sup>2</sup> knew a powerful head tribesman in the Shire highlands, whose success in battle was attributed by his tribe to the fact that he had eaten the entire body of a strong young man.

Scarcity of meat and depraved tastes are no doubt, if not causes of cannibalism, strong incentives to it. Some tribes of the

**Cannibalism**

**Depraved  
Taste and Can-  
nibal Raids**

<sup>1</sup>James MacDonald. *Myths and Religion*.

<sup>2</sup>Duff MacDonald. *Africana*.

Congo basin have been known to refuse trade in everything but human flesh. Continual raids are made upon the neighboring tribes to restock the human fattening pens. Such depravity could easily spring from the orgies and debaucheries of feasts following human sacrifices. Raiding for human flesh is not a long leap from the religious ceremony where the sacrificed victim is thrown alive from a platform to the throng below, there to be cut to pieces and divided among the ravenous, bloodthirsty worshipers, before reaching the ground. Such a scene was witnessed by Cruikshank in Ashanti.<sup>1</sup>

#### **Cannibal Zone**

Not all Pagans are cannibals, but cannibalism is a legitimate fruit of Paganism, and the abhorrent custom is very widespread. The cannibal zone, where all travelers find the practice established to a greater or less degree, either as a religious or social institution, extends from the west Guinea Coast eastward to the headwaters of the Nile, and southward from this line to include most of the enormous stretch of the Congo basin.<sup>2</sup>

#### **Witchcraft**

Witchcraft is both an outgrowth of the

<sup>1</sup>A. B. Ellis. *Ewe-Speaking Peoples*.

<sup>2</sup>Cannibalism occurs elsewhere, but in this zone it is more prevalent.

fundamental doctrine of African Paganism and one of the principal objects against which that same Paganism legislates. Being the supposed familiarity of a living person with disembodied spirits, it is the logical sequence of the idea that spirits, usually diabolical, take a lively interest in human affairs. On the other hand, its death-dealing power, when employed, is deemed so unfailing that society must take rigorous methods for self-protection.

The facts that a large proportion of Pagan Africans die violent deaths and that others die without apparent cause are so jumbled together as to mean that violence on the part of man or spirit causes every death. The African never thinks of death as natural, or accidental, or as due to unsanitary conditions and contagion. Such reasons seem to him most illogical. His logic—and one need only grant him his premise to see that he has plenty of it—argues that everything, *everything* occurs from the action of spirit on spirit. If a man is knocked on the head, shot in battle, crushed by a falling tree, the cause is evident. Usually, in case of any death, when wounds cannot be found, the verdict of the average Pagan mind is that some evilly

**All Deaths by  
Violence**

disposed member of the community has connived with equally evilly disposed spirits and bewitched the deceased. Any unusual or mysterious occurrence, such as the death of an animal by disease, ill fortune in battle, drought or flood, may also be credited to witchcraft. In any event, if guilt be proved to the African's satisfaction, the witch is impressively and effectively disposed of.

**Witch-  
palaver**

"Witch-palaver" is the legal process, conducted by the witch-doctor, which follows the charge of witchcraft. Details vary, but the main features of such a trial are: The preliminary investigation, the public "smelling-out" of the witch, and the ordeal to prove the guilt or innocence of the accused. The preliminary investigation consists of a private hearing by the witch-doctor of all the suppositions of the community as to possible reasons why this, that, or the other person might have been interested in the death or property loss of the bewitched. The public part of the witch-palaver is the farce of smelling out the witch from the assembled neighbors. To absent oneself from the smelling out is taken as a confession of guilt. The witch-doctor dances about, yells, foams

**Preliminary  
Investigation**

**Smelling Out**

at the mouth, pretending to be possessed by a god who will give him an unerring scent for witches. After working himself and the people into a frenzy of excitement, he runs in and out among the throng, smelling each person and wildly yelling at the odor of blood which he affects to detect as he approaches the vicinity of the one to be charged with witchcraft. The ordeal, which consists ordinarily of the drinking of poison, follows. If the accused vomits the poison without suffering serious harm, he is counted innocent. If he grows dizzy and shows other symptoms of ill effects from it, he is given over to all the fiendish torture and outrage which barbarous imagination can devise.

**The Ordeal**

One person may accuse another of witchcraft to his face, and the accused may challenge his accuser to the ordeal. Both take the poison, and both may be dead, in the effort to prove each other rascals, before the witch-doctor has an opportunity to fill his purse from the quarrel. An innocent person, trusting implicitly for a favorable verdict from the ordeal, instead of shunning the test, courts it. A guilty person is inclined to confess and to throw himself upon the doubtful mercy of men, rather

**Private Witch-palaver**

than upon the certain vengeance of the spirits.

**Wholesale  
Witch-  
palaver**

The inhabitants of one village may charge those of another with witchcraft; whereupon all parties, both accusers and accused, must take the poison. The number of survivors is dependent upon the strength of the poison and the constitutions of those taking it. Those who do recover are likely to be injured for life. Dr. Elmslie<sup>1</sup> tells of visiting two villages, after such a wholesale witch-palaver, in time to save a few of the sick and dying.

**Tool for Greed  
and Vengeance**

It will be seen that witchcraft readily becomes a tool for greed and vengeance. Any member of a community may adroitly start the rumor that so-and-so is a witch, and has plotted with evil spirits to cause any mysterious calamity in question. The witch-palaver then opens a sluice-gate for envious and self-interested gossip. If the witch-doctor has not previously agreed (for a price) to condemn some particular individual, this gossip will reveal to him the unpopular person of the village, and he is thus able to command approbation for his "smelling out." The witch-doctor can demand any fee he chooses, and take it

<sup>1</sup>W. A. Elmslie, M.D., *Among the Wild Ngoni*.

from the confiscated property of the one he convicts as a witch. The witch-doctor himself is frequently the one to suggest that witchcraft has been practiced. Such a proceeding is profitable in dull times. The truth is that owing to the widespread belief in their infallibility, witch trials long since have become a gigantic system of blackmail.

It must be borne in mind that the African himself is not skeptical concerning the genuineness of witch-palavers. There is no proof, alibi or anything else, that will stand in a witch trial against the ordeal. Unanimous testimony may vindicate or condemn the accused, but the trial by ordeal is, in the African mind, a trial by the spirit of the ordeal, and its decision is final.

Belief in witchcraft extends throughout Pagan Africa. It is estimated that 4,000,000 people are killed annually in the endeavor to discover witches. Whole districts have been depopulated by witch trials.

It requires an effort for a person in civilization to bear continually in mind the fact that the African is very religious. He may not appear so when judged by the

**Implicit Belief  
in Witch-  
palavers**

**Widespread  
Belief in  
Witchcraft**

**The African  
Very Religious**

morality which present-day civilization demands of religion. But to the African morals and religion have no relation. Lying, stealing, and murder are civil, not religious offences. The gods take no account of such actions. They concern only men. The fact is that there is not an awful crime or licentious vice in the catalogue which may not be committed in the very service of the gods.

**Effect on  
Morals**

Since the office of some gods is to inflame passion, the effect upon the virtue of the community may be conjectured. Priests are privileged to do anything their corrupt hearts may direct when "possessed"<sup>1</sup> by a god. In some quarters self-protection has demanded a law that, inviolate though he may be during "possession," the priest may afterward be held accountable for his deeds while possessed. The priestesses lead most immoral lives; Ellis declares that every fourth woman on the Slave Coast is a priestess, or "wife of the gods."

**The Future  
Life**

The Pagan African's idea of the future life is only a hazy conviction of a shadowy existence in a shadow world, the monotony of which is broken here and there by a re-incarnation into this world of violence

<sup>1</sup>The state of being in a feigned trance.



and sensuality. Where the belief in re-incarnation is lacking, the monotony is unrelieved. Helpless and hopeless he goes out into the dark.

The limits of this chapter allow only this meager summary of the outstanding facts of African Paganism. Delicacy permits but the most guarded references to the revolting brutality and nauseating licentiousness which are the legitimate offspring of Pagan gods and religion. To be consistent with his perverted conceptions of religion the African cannot be other than he is. Brutality lies not in himself, but in his religion. Even when slightly separated from his religion, and for a short time influenced by Christianity, he has proved to be a model of docility, trustworthiness, and inherent kindness. The Pagan African is what he is because of his religion. Change his religion and you change the African.

**A Summary**

QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER III.

AIM: TO TRACE THE EVILS OF PAGANISM FROM ROOT TO FRUIT.

- 1 Try to imagine and state what you think life would be like if you believed that you were surrounded by many powerful spirits able to do you harm.
- 2 How would it compare with living unvaccinated in the midst of a smallpox epidemic?
- 3 How would it affect your outdoor life to imagine that trees, rocks, etc., were inhabited by jealous spirits?
- 4\* How should you feel about investigating the secrets of nature?
- 5 Would your charms and offerings bring you any real sense of security? Why not?
- 6\* If you could fully understand and believe it, how would the Ninety-first Psalm appeal to you in such a situation?
- 7\* Believing in this world of capricious spirits, what ideas would you have of cause and effect?
- 8 How would this influence your steadiness in thought and action?
- 9 Could you form large ideas and plans in such a state of mind?
- 10 What sort of stories would you be willing to believe?
- 11\* What does the African lose in losing the thought of the unity and omnipotence of God?
- 12 Had the spirits of paganism any love of righteousness?
- 13 Must a man purify himself inwardly to deal with them and control them?

- 14\* What result would this have on a man's better nature?
- 15 What incentive would there be to do right?
- 16 How should you feel if you knew that any evil-minded man might bribe a spirit to do you harm?
- 17\* How would this affect the mutual confidence of the community?
- 18 What has been the effect of witchcraft in producing distrust? in causing loss of life?
- 19 Describe the evils of witchcraft and show their results.
- 20 Had the spirits any regard for the real welfare of mankind?
- 21 Could you depend on their willingness to help you if you were too poor to bribe them?
- 22 Had they any sympathy for those in misfortune?
- 23 How did they feel towards sacrifices involving cruelty?
- 24 What are some of the results in this delight in bloodshed?
- 25\* Try to imagine yourself living in a situation where such things could happen.
- 26 Should you have any glad hope of meeting such spirits in the next world?
- 27 How is cannibalism a fruit of paganism?
- 28 To what extent do the tribal and higher gods take any interest in the individual?
- 29\* How should you begin to teach an African about the true God?
- 30\* What are some of the attributes of God that the African spirits lack?
- 31\* What are some of the principal results of this lack?
- 32\* What will the love of God mean to the African when he really understands it?
- 33 Does it seem to you worth while to bring him this idea?

REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

I...Fetichism.

Bentley—Pioneering on the Congo, Vol. I; pp. 256, 257, 290, 365.

Nassau—Fetichism in West Africa, Chs. VI, VII, X, XI, XV.

Vincent—Actual Africa, pp. 438, 445, 457, 488.

Wilson—Western Africa, Pt. III; Ch. IV.

II...Witchcraft.

Bentley—Pioneering on the Congo, Vol. I; pp. 264, 270, 273, 411, 415.

Dennis—Christian Missions and Social Progress, Vol. I; pp. 198-201.

Elmslie—Among the Wild Ngoni, pp. 59, 153, 160, 223.

Nassau—Fetichism in West Africa, Chs. VIII, IX.

Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, p. 313.

III...Spirit Worship.

Elmslie—Among the Wild Ngoni, pp. 67, 70.

Nassau—Fetichism in West Africa, Chs. IV, V.

Tyler—Forty Years Among the Zulus, Ch. XI.

WHAT OF THE NIGHT?

The land dark as midnight,  
The land of the shadow of death, without any order,  
And where the light is as midnight.—JOB x: 22.

## IV

### WHAT OF THE NIGHT?

THE moral night of Africa may be partially apprehended from reference to some of the problems which are involved in the uplift of the African. A view of these problems is also essential to an adequate understanding of the significance of the transformations effected by Christianity. **Moral Night**

The problem presented by the greatest number of Africans is Paganism—the lowest rung of the religious ladder. Paganism is not all superstition, but it approaches so near this low level that it appears a jumble of superstitious fears, spiritualistic terrors, and horrible rites. It is the chaos of religion, where faith and morals are without form and void. In Africa its darkness is unrelieved even by such pale light as emanates from the heathen religions of China, India, Japan, and Korea.<sup>1</sup> **Paganism**

<sup>1</sup>While Paganism and Heathenism are commonly used interchangeably, there is ample warrant for using Paganism as the more limited term, and for applying it to the lowest forms of religion, which have neither sacred writings nor definite system.

ism produces debasing conceptions of gods, men, and religion. The grossest vices and immoralities are enjoyed equally by gods and men, and are in conformity with Pagan religion. Unwholesome and immoral customs are thus deeply implanted in the African social system.

#### Gross Vices

Lying, stealing, polygamy, slavery, and promiscuous living have the countenance and approbation of Pagan religion. Drunkenness, gluttony, every form of licentious debauchery, and even murder are features of the festivals of Pagan religion. The unspeakable, unthinkable horrors of witchcraft, human sacrifice, burial alive, and cannibalism are inextricably intertwined with Pagan religion. The reflex influence is inevitably a callousness to suffering and a fiendish gloating in brutalities. Heredity and continued practice through thousands of years have steeped the people in inbred superstitions and animal passions. Intrenched ever more deeply, the accumulating depravity increases from generation to generation with manifold power.

#### A Parallel

In spite of the 200,000 churches and

*"Pagan is now more properly applied to rude and uncivilized idolaters, while heathen embraces all who practice idolatry." Webster's International Dictionary.*



151,000 ministers in the United States,<sup>1</sup> whose labors are supplemented by various Christian, temperance, and other moral agencies; in spite of 449,000<sup>1</sup> common school teachers and 25,000<sup>1</sup> instructors of higher learning, whose uplifting work is supplemented by libraries and current literature; in spite of a vast army of police, attorneys, and judges; in spite of jails, reformatories, and prisons in towns, counties, and states; in spite of all these uplifting forces and corrective agencies, America has an awful array of drunkards and social outcasts, assaults and robberies, murders and lynchings. Imagine what would be the statistics of crime, the pandemonium of sensuality, violence, and bloodshed, if laws against vice were changed into encouragement of it; if officers of the law were wholly and solely abettors of crime; if reformatories were sanctuaries of lawlessness; if every minister were a priest of lust, preaching it as a cardinal feature of his religion, and churches were brothels wide open day and night. Imagine this if you can, and you are but beginning to apprehend the actual state of affairs in Africa.

Two thirds of Africa's population, or

**Africa the  
Pagan  
Continent**

<sup>1</sup> *Social Progress*, 1905, in round numbers.

90,000,000, are Pagan, and these comprise nearly two thirds of the Pagans of the world. Africa is the Pagan continent. Its peculiar form of religion has existed for untold centuries. To show the African that the God whom he ignorantly feels after (out of his confusion of evil spirits), and whom he supposes to be malignant or indifferent, is his God, loving and compassionate; to reform and transform his heart, are features of the first problem which confronts the Christian missionary in Africa.

**Moham-  
medanism**

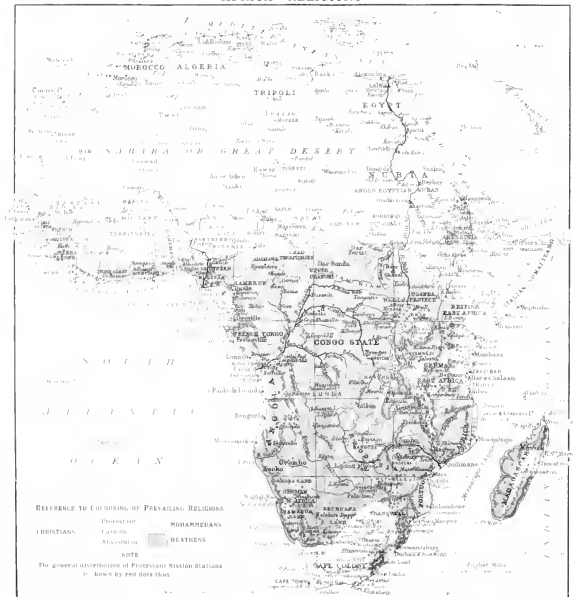
Mohammedanism, although less formidable, numerically, than Paganism, is a greater problem from a missionary standpoint. It is a religion superior to Paganism in that it has the conception of one God who is interested in his worshipers.<sup>1</sup> This fact gives the African convert to Islam a sense of dignity and importance that may well account for the marked improvement in demeanor and carriage that is so often noted in him. Whether conviction or fear is the motive, confession by the formula, "God is one God and Mohammed is his prophet," is definite, easily grasped, and

<sup>1</sup> Mohammedanism began almost as a Christian sect, its founder having been attracted by Jewish and Christian teachings. Its prophets are the Bible prophets, including Christ, with Mohammed as the greatest of all.

" DAYBREAK



# AFRICA—RELIGIONS.



doubtless often attractive to those who are weary of ceaselessly evading multitudes of malicious gods.

Conversion to Mohammedanism may or may not improve character. In the African convert there is a new cleanliness of person, neatness of clothing, and dignity of bearing. Witchcraft, burial alive, human sacrifice, and cannibalism are eliminated, but the heart may, and usually does, remain as unregenerate as ever. The superior religion grants license and approval to the more subtle sins of greed and passion that prey upon human hearts—lying, stealing, intemperance,<sup>1</sup> enslaving, the social vice, and murder. The promise of immoral life in paradise is the acme of the Koran's incentive to the faithful. This higher sanction of his animal nature increases the self-esteem of the African Moslem and fortifies him against improvement.

**Effect upon  
Character**

“You must not wear our clothes,” said a Moslem to a European. “They are given to us by God to set forth the character of our religion; and he has given you

**Moslem Morals**

<sup>1</sup> From the fact that the Koran teaches temperance the inference is sometimes drawn that all Mohammedans are total abstainers. But such unimpeachable authorities as James Richardson, Canon Robinson, Captain Lugard, and Slatin Pasha testify to the free indulgence in intoxicants by many African Moslems.

Europeans your clothes to set forth the character of your religion. You see these garments of ours, how wide and how flowing they are; our sleeves are loose, and we have easy-fitting slippers. As our clothes are wide, so is our religion; we can steal, tell lies, deceive each other, commit adultery, and do all manner of iniquity just as we wish; and at the last day our prophet Mohammed will make it all right for us. But you poor Europeans! You have tight-fitting trousers, tight-fitting waistcoats, and tight-fitting jackets. Your clothes are just like your religion—narrow. If you steal, cheat, deceive, or tell lies, you stand in constant fear of condemnation of God.”<sup>1</sup>

**Moslem Assimilation**

Moslems—Arabs or Africans—readily assimilate with Pagan Africans, adopting their kinds of food and mode of living, and intermarry with them. Thirteen centuries—forty generations—of continuous African heredity have made Islamism native to the continent. This fact is of tremendous moment. The foreign Christian missionary must always remain a foreigner. Add to this the numerical strength of Mohammedans in Africa—50,000,000—and the

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by A. P. Atterbury in *Islam in Africa*.

problem looms up with gigantic proportions.

Possibly most important of all the features of the problem presented by Islamism is its organized aggressiveness. Islamism in the Sudan, its African stronghold, is a growing and virile force. The Mohammedan Sudanese, within the past century, are credited with having produced one of the greatest outbreaks of missionary zeal in human history. Moslem missionaries are moving out upon Central Africa with their easy-going morals, and stimulating new converts with an intolerant and almost impregnable bigotry.

**Organized  
Aggressiveness**

The Moslem "university" at Cairo, teaching in the twentieth century the Ptolemaic system of the universe—the earth at the center of the solar system, around which the sun and stars revolve—is a type of Islam. To come in touch with obsolete arts and sciences of civilization may mentally stimulate Pagan hordes in a slight degree; but, on the whole, though Islam lifts the African socially and commercially a great deal, intellectually and morally it does little for him. The pliant Pagan becomes the fanatical Moslem. Obstinate ignorance and immorality are es-

**Cairo "Univer-  
sity" a Type  
of Islam**

tablished more firmly than ever in his unregenerated heart. It is a most urgent necessity that Christianity outstrip Islam in the conversion of Pagan Africa. Once converted to Islam, the difficulty of winning the African to a higher civilization is immeasurably increased.

#### Specific Problems

Many specific problems for Christian missions are included in and implied by Paganism and Mohammedanism. With but few exceptions the problems are much the same in both religions. For example, it is often very difficult for a genuine convert to understand the Christian attitude toward polygamy and slavery, two institutions deeply rooted in the social life of both Pagan and Moslem.

#### Polygamy

Polygamy is a serious problem to the advance of Christianity in Africa. Physicians and missionaries of long residence among African tribes say that one of the greatest social and moral evils of Africa is polygamy.<sup>1</sup> It originates and is fostered in lust, greed, and indolence. It cannot, therefore, be permitted among Christians of good standing. But custom is practically a god to the African. To him one

<sup>1</sup>W. A. Elmslie, M.D., of the Livingstonia Mission; S. P. Verner, of the Kassai Mission; and others.



of the strongest reasons that a thing should be is that it has been. So the battle is not wholly won if he is convinced that a thing is morally wrong. Practical obstacles also arise. Often a convert cannot dispose of his wives at once without great injustice, real or apparent, to them or to their children. There are certain native laws which Christianity recognizes as just, preventing the putting away of a wife for other than serious moral offenses. A plural wife, if converted, cannot always easily obtain freedom from her husband. Indeed, the necessity of giving up polygamy if they become Christians appears to be a greater obstacle to women than to men. Missionaries have often found the women the most strenuous advocates of the custom. There is, however, a steadfastness among African women who have become Christians.

An incident illustrative of the difficulty which confronts a native polygamist if he would become a convert to Christianity has recently been given by a missionary of the Paris Society.<sup>1</sup> A chief of the Batlokwa in South Africa accompanied one of his wives to the mission. Said he, "I bring

**The Problem  
of Polygamy  
Illustrated**

<sup>1</sup>Barthelemy Pascal, in *Missionary Review*, May, 1905.

my wife to you that you may receive her into the class. She thirsts for God." When Kathokan was asked why he too did not come, he answered: "It is a good road, but it is narrow. I cannot get through with my six wives, and I cannot separate from them. Oh! I know God will give me strength if I ask him, because he answers. You know what a heavy drinker I was. I asked God to give me strength to give up beer. He heard my prayer, and since then I have not drunk. You see he hears, and because I do not want to leave my six wives I do not like to talk to him about it." Kathokan, still out of the narrow road, died in 1900. The pathos of the story is increased with the knowledge that Ma-Nhalla, the wife who went to the mission, and who became a consistent Christian, had been taught by her husband, the chief, to pray. He also had given her instruction in the catechism. He had learned to pray and to read in his younger days. Thus had he helped to create in her the "thirst for God."

Domestic slavery<sup>1</sup> is so closely related to

<sup>1</sup>It must be borne in mind that there is a distinction between domestic slavery and the foreign slave trade. The former relates wholly to the native institution, which is a comparatively mild form of servitude, the latter to the iniquitous foreign traffic in human beings.

polygamy that wives are often selected from favorite slaves. Advocates of slavery and polygamy would have about equally difficult tasks in justifying themselves before the Christian conscience of America and Europe. In Africa, on the contrary, one custom is about as deeply rooted in the social system as the other. The problem is much the same: first, how to create a conscience and sentiment against the practice; and second, how to find ways and means of gradually abolishing the time-honored custom without serious shock to the social system. It can scarcely be appreciated in a Christian land of to-day how thoroughly an African community is dependent upon domestic slavery. From a private individual to the chief or king, from the family to the tribe or nation, the whole social life is built upon slavery. Even slaves own slaves. This second class of slaves may own others. Slaves are the labor-saving device of Africa. They are the carriers of trade. They are currency. Anything that touches slavery affects the entire community, and the African is very conservative in changing his customs.

The problem presented by domestic slavery may be illustrated by an incident which

**The Problem  
of Domestic  
Slavery Illus-  
trated**

occurred in connection with Bishop Hartzell's work in Angola. One of his native preachers, a man of extraordinary endowments, some time after entering the bishop's force of workers took a girl as a slave. He and his wife argued that they treated her well, that she was more than contented, that she was far better off with them than to be the slave, as she would have been, of others. Back of it all was the argument that slavery was right. It was the way God had provided for the care of a certain portion of humanity. It was only after a protracted interview with the bishop that they were convinced of the wrong of slavery, and joyfully freed the girl, though retaining her in the family as a paid domestic.

#### **Diversity of Languages**

The diversity of African languages is another obstacle to be overcome. The existence of 600 languages and dialects, all, before the advent of the missionary, without written form and alphabet, indicates some measure of the problem. Different dialects must be mastered for effective work in neighboring districts. Grammars, dictionaries, text-books, and Bible and other literature translation which with great pains have been prepared

for one people may be nearly useless in work among peoples not far distant. It is a serious handicap to the rapid progress of the gospel that all the language work in one section cannot be used in many others, not to say every section of the continent.

The climate of Africa is a serious problem. **Climate** Notwithstanding the healthfulness of the extreme north and south, and sections of the high interior, there is the fact that for Europeans and Americans Africa presents the most trying climate of any of the continents. The scourge of Africa is not a peculiar disease. Malarial fever is known the world over, but in Africa it is more prevalent and virulent than is usual in other parts of the world. The low, marshy coast lands, with their dense forests and moist, malaria-laden air, are particularly unhealthful. Since their occupation by the white man the death rate has been appalling. Even natives do not escape the ravages of the African fever. Indeed, some claim that the white man will outlive the African on his native soil.

Serious handicaps to the advance of Christianity in Africa originate from the contact of the natives with unscrupulous traders and officials from Christian lands. **The White Peril**

Thus civilization itself, especially if it precedes Christian missions, becomes a most serious problem. It is a shock to the self-complacency of the white man to reflect that millions of the world's population are threatened with a white peril that is very real and potent. "Christian civilization without Christ" is worse than Paganism. "The state of morals among some Europeans is scarcely whisperable. It is awful, the amount of corruption and filth introduced by them." It is comparatively easy to convert primitive Africans to Christianity, and to establish them against the later introduction of the vices of civilization. It is supremely difficult to Christianize them after they have become viciously civilized. This has long been true in coast regions, and it is increasingly true in the interior as railroads and commerce introduce coast civilization. The natives of East Africa between Uganda and the coast furnish an illustration. Missionaries on their way to the interior field for years have been obliged to pass through the territory of susceptible tribes. One who is in a position to have an intimate knowledge of the present situation in this region says that already there has been a "serious deteri-

oration," and that Christian work among these same tribes will now be far more difficult than it would have been a few years ago.<sup>1</sup>

The partition of the continent among the great Powers of Europe has already bestowed many blessings upon the African—the warrant of stable government, the suppression of native wars, the prohibition of savage customs, the insurance of regular trade—but it also has brought the menace of plunder by stronger foreigners, and, where unscrupulous officials control, of slaughter upon slight or no offense. For instance, the Congo Free State was originally organized under the guardianship of the King of Belgium with the avowed purpose "not to create a Belgian province, but to establish a powerful Negro state." Whatever the original intention of King Leopold, the persistent practice of the Belgian administration of the Congo Free State has repudiated every fair promise and made the "Congo Slave State"<sup>2</sup> a more fitting title. Instead of developing a powerful Negro state, Belgium has occupied the Congo basin in force and reduced the in-

**Foreign Gov-  
ernment**

<sup>1</sup> J. J. Willis in *Missionary Review*, March, 1905.

<sup>2</sup> E. D. Morel, Editor of the *West Africa Mail*.

habitants to a worse slavery than they ever knew before the coming of the white man. The land has been robbed of its rubber by a system of terrorism. A given amount of rubber is demanded of a district, and if for any reason, such as death or pestilence in a tribe, the amount is not forthcoming, mutilation and often wholesale slaughter is resorted to as an example to future delinquents. It is also thought by many that the prolonged rebellion of the natives (1903 and following years) in German Southwest Africa was an outgrowth of over-rigorous if not unjust treatment. Naturally, missionary work is greatly hindered under such conditions, for the missionary is classed with the foreign persecutors.

**Portuguese  
Administra-  
tion**

The Portuguese often seriously obstruct mission work by their method of army conscription. Sometimes all the young men of a mission school are forced into government service, and the results of years of training are thus greatly impaired. The Portuguese also carry on the slave trade under the form of contract labor. Natives, collected from the interior in large numbers by means of the fair promises of planters' agents, enter into labor contracts for periods of seven to ten years. In reality



they sell themselves into slavery for life. Once in the toils of an unprincipled slave driver there is little hope for them. Many are thus shipped as "colonials" to the islands of San Thomé and Principe to work plantations, and few ever return. "They die very soon." The system is so "regular" that no other government interferes, but it is, nevertheless, the same diabolical system that civilization abhors.

The foreign slave trade, as blasting to life and morals as any Pagan institution could ever be, is now limited to the Arab traffic. Until very recently, at least, Arab traders, who were also good Mohammedans, plied their inhuman business at the very heart of the continent. That it is still carried on is more than probable, but to what extent is unknown. In the Sudan, for instance, weak tribes are preyed upon by stronger ones under the cloak of putting down uprisings among subject peoples. The foreign Powers need continually to be on guard against such lawlessness. Mohammedan outlets in both North and East Africa make detection somewhat difficult.

Even where governments are kindly disposed toward the native, they sometimes are unsympathetic toward Christian mis-

**The Foreign  
Slave Trade**

**Discrimina-  
tion Against  
Christian  
Missions**

sions. The British flag has been of untold benefit to Christian missions. Yet British policy prohibits Christian missions to Moslems at Khartum.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, the Koran is one of the text-books (the Bible being excluded) in Gordon College, Khartum, which was founded by Christian gifts in memory of a great Christian hero. The ringing of church bells in the Blantyre district is prohibited, that the Moslems may not be disturbed!<sup>2</sup> The British Central Africa government requires an application from Christian missionaries for the privilege of erecting mission school buildings, which means that the privilege may be denied. No such requirement is made of Mohammedan missionaries. The work among the Zulus finds serious obstruction from the British government. Native pastors are prohibited from performing the marriage ceremony, and heavy taxes upon the natives practically make self-supporting churches impossible.<sup>3</sup> It should, of course, be borne in mind that Great Britain has had many grievous experiences in dealing with Mohammedans, particularly in In-

<sup>1</sup> Charles R. Watson, "Missionary Conditions in the Egyptian Sudan," *Missionary Review*, February, 1905.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. W. A. Elmslie, of Livingstonia Mission, in conversation with author.

<sup>3</sup> *Missionary Review*, May, 1905.

dia, and government officials, who know how easy it is to fan Mohammedan zeal into a flame of rebellion, are slow to do anything to alienate these fanatical people. The problem from a government standpoint is a serious one, but the fact remains that the Christian missionaries are handicapped by conditions as they now exist.

One traveling in Africa may meet scores of traders and government officials, and find that, with but few exceptions, the more notable and conspicuous because so few, they conform to the confession of one, more frank than the rest: "Oh, I leave my conscience at home when I come to the Coast." Such a moral standard indicates the odds against which the splendidly equipped and heroic missionaries have constantly labored. In Madagascar the loose morals and worldly life of European traders and government officials are leading many natives into the infidelity which the foreigners profess.

**Trade and  
Government  
Policy**

Perhaps nothing furnishes a better and more deplorable illustration of the state of affairs than the African liquor trade. Not only frequently, but well-nigh invariably, the ship that bears one or two missionaries to convert the African carries also thou-

**Liquor Traffic**

sands of gallons of rum to damn him. "The Roquette was loaded to its utmost capacity with the usual cargoes for the African trade. A heavy charge of rum was a conspicuous item. This came principally from Boston, whose rum and religion constitute a puzzle which Africans and philanthropists have tried in vain to solve. When I was introduced to the black Ashantis, they were informed that I was an American. 'Ah, Melican man, eh?' said the chief, 'Melican lum plenty good, you got Melican lum?' This was all he knew of America. I could not elicit anything more about my country from him than this testimony to the far-reaching influence of New England culture."<sup>1</sup> During a recent period of four years 30,000,000 of gallons<sup>2</sup> of strong drink were shipped from Europe and America to help in the work of civilizing Africa! Missionaries assert that their worst enemy is not witchcraft, native depravity, licentiousness, nor race-old superstitions, but rum from their own Christian land. One expresses the general conviction, "I would rather face heathenism in any other form than the liquor traffic in Africa."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup>S. P. Verner, *Pioneering in Central Africa*.

<sup>2</sup>A. S. White, *Development of Africa*.

<sup>3</sup>Agnes McAllister, of Garraway, Liberia.

Native religions, instead of discouraging, encourage the use of liquor. Drunkenness is a common part of religious festivals, and is considered the result of possession by the spirit or god of the drink. The powerful liquors from civilized lands not only utterly demoralize the natives, frequently to the extent of depopulating whole districts, but reinforce native religions and superstitions against Christian appeal.

**Native Religions Encourage Use of Liquor**

White graphically epitomizes the deplorable situation: "Islam, or Arab influence, advances with the sword in one hand and the Koran in the other—as it appears to us. Christianity, or European influence, advances with the sword or paper treaties in one hand, and the Bible or a case of gin in the other—as it appears to the native mind. It is no use quarreling with the comparison. It is a just and faithful one."<sup>1</sup>

**A Comparison**

The appeal of Molique, King of Nupe, to Bishop Crowther, is as full of judgment against civilization as of pathos for the African. "Barasa (rum or gin) has ruined our country. It has ruined our people very much. It has made our people mad. I

**African Appeals**

<sup>1</sup> A. S. White, *Development of Africa*.

agree to everything for trade except barasa. We *beg* Crowther, the great Christian minister, to *BEG* the great priests to *BEG* the English queen to prevent bringing barasa into this land. For God's sake he must help us in this matter. He must not leave us to become spoiled."<sup>1</sup>

**A Recent Appeal**

Another African prince, writing for the *Century Magazine*, April, 1905, says: "I can prove from my own knowledge that all the wars that have been fought by my tribe since the advent of civilization have been brought on by rash action on the part of drinking men. If we have not advanced higher in the scale of civilization, neither had we (I speak again for my own people), until this fatal liquor was forced upon us, fallen so low as many. We need but an honest helping hand to raise us to as high a state of culture as was possessed by most of the dark races at a time when the Western Continent was still in the gloom of barbarism.

"If the present policy continues, we cannot fight as men should against the wrong. The poison is fast doing its deadly work, and in a few years there will be none of us

<sup>1</sup> Jesse Page, *Samuel Crowther*, (adapted) from message of Molique, Emir of Nupe.

left to resist the oppressors. But our blood will be on their heads, and will cry to Heaven for vengeance.

“Even if foreign Powers should for a time be financial losers, they can not eventually be anything but gainers—aided by a country almost unlimited in its capabilities, and the willing, grateful service of forty millions of people rescued from the moral as well as physical death now staring them in the face.

“All will be with them in this crusade; leaders and people alike are stretching out their hands for aid. We appeal, not to England, not to France, not to Germany, not to other empires and states, but to the consciences of the individual men forming such nations. We appeal, not for a gift or favor, but for our right. Even as the Americans appealed for their rights and obtained them by heroic measures, so do we claim the right for ‘freedom to worship God,’ and to worship Him by sobriety, industry, good-will, and all the Christian graces.”<sup>1</sup>

The race problem, in its many phases, **Race Problem** is another serious obstacle to Christian

<sup>1</sup> Momolu Massaquoi, Prince of the Veis, Sierra Leone. He was educated at Tennessee College and was one of the speakers at the World's Parliament of Religions, Chicago, 1893.

missions. The white man—trader and government official—wants the black man, but wants him only as his menial. Wages are given him, but for those wages he is expected to “keep his place” with the lower order of animals. At least one high official of a South African company can be cited, who openly boasts of his “boys” being slaves. He feeds them, clothes them, and beats them, as he deems they severally need. Another man makes the proposal that saloons be established in connection with factories and mines, so that the native will work to earn money to buy liquor. Aware of the frightful havoc which strong drink makes with the African, one can appreciate the heartlessness of this proposition. Employers of the type suggested, and there are too many of them, do not favor evangelizing and educating the African. Teach him menial labor, but not a letter of the alphabet, is their sentiment. There are noble exceptions. For example, the British Central Africa government so appreciates the services of the Livingstonia Mission that a premium is given for each graduate from that institution. Some employers dismiss summarily all propositions to util-







## INDUSTRIAL MISSIONS

CARPENTER'S APPRENTICE, EAST AFRICA

SMALL BOYS CLEANING PATH, CONGO COUNTRY

ize African labor. They say, "The Kaffir is too lazy to work, the Zulu too proud," and forthwith add confusion to the race question by bidding for cheap foreign labor. It is estimated that there are 300,000 Indian and possibly 25,000 Chinese coolies in South Africa and on the East Coast.<sup>1</sup> They take the place of the African in work which would develop him. His progress is retarded, and the missionary problem is rendered vastly more trying.

The harsh discrimination of whites against blacks inevitably stimulates retaliating measures. In recent years this antagonism on the part of the blacks has taken the form, in South Africa, of demanding church government independent of white influence. "Africa for the Africans" is the motto of the "Ethiopian Movement," as it is called. The movement is prejudicial; through it the African strikes at the missionaries (and the churches back of them), the one class of foreigners upon whom he can depend for fair treatment and the highest service.

An illustration of the serious consequences that are natural outgrowths of

**Ethiopian  
Movement**

**Violence En-  
gendered**

<sup>1</sup> These estimates are confirmed by the *Blue Book of Missions*, 1905.

the Ethiopian Movement is furnished in the native insurrection (1903 and following years) in German Southwest Africa. Henry Witboi, a leader of the uprising, had been one of the trusted native converts under the Rhenish Missionary Society. But he became possessed of the delusion that the Ethiopian Movement was the means by which God would free the blacks from white control. One of his first acts was to have Mr. Holzapfel, a lay missionary, shot, because the latter refused to deliver to the insurgents the powder and ammunition in his charge.<sup>1</sup> The Ethiopian Movement embitters the native, intensifies the race problem, and threatens to extend northward from South Africa.

Roman Catholic opposition to Protestant missions, wherever, with but few honorable exceptions, the two types of Christianity meet in the foreign field, is by no means the least of the Protestant mission problems in Africa. The Lutheran pioneers in 1632, and Krapf over 200 years later, were expelled from Abyssinia through Jesuit intrigues. Mackay, splendid in heroism and disinterested devotion, was maligned, antagonized, and seriously

<sup>1</sup> *Missionary Review*, April, 1905.

handicapped by Roman missionaries while endeavoring to win Uganda to Christ. These are but representative instances. Facts will bear out the statement that wherever a Roman Catholic government environment, Portuguese, Spanish, or French, dominates African territory, there Protestant missionaries may expect unscrupulous treatment from some, if not all, Roman Catholic officials and missionaries.

Within the past few years incidents have occurred in the Inhambane district, East Africa, Angola, West Africa, the Madeira Islands, and elsewhere, that reveal the same spirit of intolerance that animated the Inquisition and Saint Bartholomew's massacre, and that has made South America and the Philippines what they are. In 1896, after the French conquest of Madagascar, native Christians were persecuted. Romanists took possession of Protestant church and school property, and were protected in their violence by the French government. When the victims resisted this confiscation of their property, they were imprisoned and tortured, and in many cases murdered. "Evidence is to be found in the devastated mission stations, in the scarred and broken Protestant teachers

and evangelists of Madagascar, and in the testimonies of British missionaries whose word is beyond doubt."<sup>1</sup> The papal bull directed against the Protestant missionaries on the Congo in the late seventies and early eighties shows plainly where Roman persecutions originate: "The movements of the heretics are to be followed up, and their efforts harassed and destroyed."<sup>2</sup>

---

#### QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER IV.

AIM: TO STUDY AFRICA'S CLAIM ON CHRISTENDOM IN VIEW OF HER NEEDS.

##### I...*Non-moral needs.*

- 1 In what ways is the diversity of languages a hindrance to missions?
- 2 How does Africa compare in healthfulness with other continents?
- 3 Does this prevent traders and government officials from settling all over the country?
- 4 Is the death rate likely to increase or diminish? Why?

##### II...*Needs existing before the entrance of Christendom.*

- 5 Is there any other such mass of population on the earth's surface whose religion is such a curse to them?

---

<sup>1</sup> The French Protestants assisted greatly in saving evangelical Christianity in Madagascar. In two years' time they added twenty-two missionaries to their forces. T. T. Matthews, *Thirty Years in Madagascar*.

<sup>2</sup> W. Holman Bentley, *Pioneering on the Congo*.

- 6\* What manifestations of African religion are more cruel than anything you know of in India or China?
- 7 What are the chances for developing noble character in such an atmosphere?
- 8 If you were a converted African, what would be your gratitude to those who had brought you the gospel?
- 9\* How should we have to change the Christian institutions of America to make our surroundings like those of the African?
- 10 In what ways does Islam benefit the African?
- 11 What does it fail to do for him?
- 12 What is the attitude of the Moslem towards polygamy and slavery?
- 13 What advantages has Islam over Christianity in winning the African?
- 14 How does it affect the ease with which he is converted to Christianity?
- 15\* What are some of the evils of polygamy?
- 16 Why should you object to your father having several wives?
- 17 What are some of the difficulties in the way of giving up polygamy?
- 18\* If a Christian African had several wives, all of whom had children, what should you tell him to do with them?
- 19 Why is slavery wrong?
- 20 How could an African argue in favor of slavery?
- 21 Is there anything but Christianity that can meet this class of needs?
- III...*Needs created by contact with Christendom.*
- 22 What is the effect of non-Christian civilization on the African?
- 23 How should you feel towards Buddhism if all the Buddhists you had ever met were cruel, immoral, and unjust?

## 136 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

- 24 How do the lives of Europeans in Africa advertise Christianity?
  - 25 What has been the effect on missions of Belgian rule in the Congo Free State?
  - 26 What are the evils of Portuguese administration?
  - 27\* Why do you think England puts restrictions on Christians from which Moslems are free?
  - 28 What are the evils of the liquor traffic in Africa?
  - 29 Upon whom does the responsibility rest in this matter?
  - 30\* What is there that you can do to help remove this evil?
  - 31\* In view of the evils that it has already introduced, what does the white race owe to Africa?
  - 32 In what spirit ought we to treat those who have had so few of our blessings?
  - 32 What is the attitude of non-Christian traders in South Africa towards the blacks?
  - 34 What is the cause of their attitude?
  - 25 Has this treatment made the blacks any easier to handle?
  - 36\* Which of these classes of needs lays upon us the heaviest responsibility, and why?
  - 37 Is the greatness of the needs any argument for inaction?
- 

### REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

#### I...The Language Problem.

Battersby—Pilkington of Uganda, Ch. X.

Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, Ch. V.

Noble—Redemption of Africa, pp. 160-167.

Thornton—Africa Waiting, pp. 16-18.

Tyler—Forty Years Among the Zulus, Ch. II.

Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, Ch. XXXV.

Wilson—Western Africa, Pt. IV; Ch. IV.



II...Slavery.

Bentley—Pioneering on the Congo, Ch. II.

Drummond—Tropical Africa, Ch. IV.

Harrison—Mackay of Uganda, Ch. XII.

Jack—Daybreak in Livingstonia, Ch. XII.

Wilson—Western Africa, Pt. IV; Ch. III.

III...Polygamy.

Tyler—Forty Years Among the Zulus, Ch. XIII.

Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, pp. 256, 257,  
455.

Wilson—Western Africa, Pt. II; Ch. IV.



## THE MORNING COMETH

Where is light most needed? Without question in  
dark, dark Africa. —BISHOP HILL.

A voice  
Proclaiming social truth shall spread,  
And justice. —TENNYSON.

# V

## THE MORNING COMETH

WITH Christianity as the dominating force, commerce and European control are mighty allies in solving the problems which confront Christian missions in Africa. Commerce creates and supplies wants, and if the wants are wholesome the people are elevated somewhat. Industry is stimulated and peace is fostered. European control supplants native misrule with stable government. While not always righteous in their administration (particularly the case with Belgium and Portugal), the foreign governments guarantee inestimable benefits to Africa. The blessings to the African through British rule can scarcely be exaggerated.

**Allies of  
Christianity**

The solution of the problems presented by corrupt foreign civilization is kindred to the solution for the same problems in civilized countries. The difference is one of degree rather than kind. In Africa unscrupulous government, conscienceless

**Counteracting  
Corrupt Civiliza-  
tion**

trade, social vice, race hatred, and religious intolerance have freer scope because so far removed from the restraining influence of Christian public sentiment. It is obvious that such problems must be solved by the foreign governments and civilizations responsible for their existence in Africa, rather than by Christian missions. The suppression of the foreign slave trade is a notable example. Livingstone, the missionary, could arouse Christian conscience against the abhorrent traffic, and could inspire the Powers to a combined effort to heal this "open sore of the world," but the responsibility for the abolition of the traffic was and must be until entirely stamped out governmental rather than missionary. So also resolute Christian public sentiment in civilization against the liquor traffic in Africa is just as essential as it is against the iniquitous business in the home land. Most of the foreign powers interested in Africa, realizing the uneconomic feature of destroying African peoples with rum, endeavor to control the trade. Sir George Goldie, the foremost commercial statesman in British Nigeria, and virtually the founder of the Protectorate, voiced the common sentiment of those at once humane

**The Slave  
Trade**

**The Liquor  
Traffic**

and economically wise: "I speak from sixteen years' experience, and I say confidently that unless immediate steps are taken to stop this traffic—not by higher duty, but by absolute prohibition—a state of things will soon be brought about that must ultimately lead to the entire abandonment of the country. I cannot believe that the conscience of Europe will long allow that the vast populous regions of tropical Africa should be used only as a cesspool of European alcohol."<sup>1</sup> The Brussels Conference (1890) resolved to restrict the sale of liquor to districts into which it had been introduced up to that time. The fact is encouraging as indicating the attitude of the governments, although it is true that the liquor dealers evade the restriction and persistently ply their trade in the prohibited sections.

The foreign Powers deal severely with Pagan customs and conditions which endanger human life and brutalize the people. Cannibalism, human sacrifice, witchcraft, and native wars are suppressed wherever found within the sphere of military force. The result is that they are no longer prevalent in coast regions. With the spread

**Suppression of  
Pagan Brutal-  
ities**

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by F. Mockler-Ferryman, *British Nigeria*.

of effective European control the entire continent will be freed from these awful barbarities.

**Factors in the  
Conversion  
of Islam**

Commerce and European governments are most important factors in the solution of the various problems presented by Islam. The strength of Islam is ignorance and fanaticism. Enlightenment and restraint are essential elements in Christianizing Moslems. Commerce contributes to a larger vision, European control to tolerance, and both to a receptive attitude toward education, the most important feature of missionary work for Mohammedans, as is abundantly proved by the work of the American Mission in Egypt.

**The Passing  
of Domestic  
Slavery**

The policies of governments in regard to such institutions as domestic slavery vary. Usually radical interference is avoided. It is not deemed wise unduly to arouse native opposition. The first measure adopted, as in parts of British Nigeria for example, is the destroying of the legal status of slavery. This practically places the slave on the grade of a servant, the master having no property right in him, and the slave being able to claim his freedom when he chooses. In some sections slavery is abolished by law, although where



such is the case<sup>1</sup> Christianity has paved the way by creating a strong moral sentiment against slave-holding.<sup>2</sup> Opposed to this fact is the probability that efforts toward abolition are likely to meet most stubborn opposition in Mohammedan Africa, where the religion fosters slavery. Commerce, bestowing blessings while advancing its own interests, is certain to have a large share in ridding the continent of domestic slavery. Take, for instance, the matters of roads and currency. Until the advent of European enterprise, represented both by missions and commerce, there were no roads in Africa. Aside from the caravan routes of the desert, and the navigable portions of rivers, narrow, crooked paths have served every purpose of travel, and slaves have answered for conveyance. Road building makes other and better means of transportation possible and must serve the beneficent end of decreasing the number of slaves. Slaves, in common with other personal property, now change hands as currency. This condition, too, must be altered,

<sup>1</sup>South and East Africa, Uganda, and Madagascar are instances.

<sup>2</sup>The German East Africa government has decreed that all children born within its jurisdiction after January, 1906, shall be free.

when the time arrives for a fixed currency to be generally introduced into interior Africa by foreign nations. And an altered condition, again, means decrease of slaves.

**Overcoming  
Climate**

The problem presented by the climate of Africa is being solved by the cordial co-operation of the missionary, government official, and trader. Dr. D. Kerr Cross, a leading authority upon African diseases, acquired his expert knowledge during his service as a medical missionary in the lake district. Of late years the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, patronized alike by missionary, civil, and commercial interests, has contributed greatly to the understanding of African diseases. Strange as it may appear, precautions in diet, clothing, and sanitation are comparatively recent methods employed for fighting African fever.

**African Fever**

It has been found that the destruction of a species of mosquito which transfers the malarial poison is a most effective preventive to African fever. Physicians and officials of long residence in Africa believe in the feasibility of carrying out immediate and sweeping sanitary measures. The German physician at Kamerun has demonstrated that the clearing off of heavy underbrush, and the draining of stagnant

pools, together with ordinary precautions, greatly reduce malaria. Col. A. F. Mockler-Ferryman asserts that the cost of cleansing the Guinea Coast of unsanitary conditions "would probably be covered in a couple of years by the saving in passage money of invalided officials and their successors."<sup>1</sup>

Kindred to the mosquito theory for malaria is the theory that a species of tsetse fly, which is itself so destructive to animals in some parts of Africa, propagates the sleeping sickness, and medical science is devoting itself to the study of this apparently incurable disease.<sup>2</sup>

**Sleeping Sick-  
ness**

It is fitting to emphasize the missionary's share in bringing about further altered conditions. His work is less ostentatious but more marvelous, because he accomplishes results, not by force of arms (a practical method where governments are concerned), but by the patient, con-

**The Mission-  
ary and  
Civilization**

<sup>1</sup>Col. A. F. Mockler-Ferryman, *British Nigeria*.

<sup>2</sup>Sleeping sickness is what its name indicates, a lethargy which grows more and more powerful until the long sleep, death, ensues. Its ravages are confined to the natives, the European rarely, if ever, being attacked. In the Congo basin, as well as in Uganda, it is especially and alarmingly prevalent. In the Congo it is estimated that it claims 10,000 victims annually, with this death rate increasing. On the island of Buvuma, Uganda, it is said to have reduced the population in one year (1902-3) from 22,000 to 8,000.

tinued beating of the gospel message upon hardened Pagan hearts. Christianity, the truest civilization, works in Africa, as everywhere, through transformed character and not by external force. This civilization introduced by the missionary gradually radiates until it dominates whole communities. After all due acknowledgment has been made to the governments, the fact still remains that even on the coast, where the governments have been most effective, the missionary, too, has been a powerful factor in changes which have occurred. Old Calabar is an instance. There the results of Christian teaching, before being supplemented by civil authority, had notably changed the people. Farther inland, where the missionaries have been the pioneers of civilization, they and they alone deserve the credit. Often, before foreign governments have had any influence upon barbarous customs, Christian missions have largely eliminated them, and have produced native civilizations at which the world marvels. Such has been the case in Bechuana-land, Basutoland, Ngoniland and the Lake Nyasa country, in Uganda, parts of the Congo basin, and in various other sections.

It is in dealing with polygamy that the moral suasion of Christianity is left more definitely to itself, for governments do not often interfere with the custom. That some headway is being made is shown by such testimony as that of Mr. J. J. Jackson, a chief magistrate in Natal, who says: "I firmly believe that it is only a matter of time, when under the quiet, unostentatious work of the missionaries polygamy will die out. The number of licenses issued by me during 1902 for marriages by Christian rites was double that for the previous year, which is a very encouraging fact and one which speaks well for the future of the natives. If this continues, as I believe it will, I see no reason why the much-vexed question of polygamy should not be solved by a natural process. All credit is due to the missionaries who have succeeded in wisely placing before the natives the advisability of such marriages, and I am convinced that they will do more to abolish the practice of polygamy than any legislation on the part of parliament can do. It is a remarkable fact that so few natives who have contracted Christian marriages break their marriage vows, prosecution of natives for bigamy being compara-

tively rare, as the records of our courts will show."<sup>1</sup>

**Alphabet and  
Literature**

The reduction of African languages to written forms has been left almost wholly to the Christian missionary. Already scores of the more important languages and dialects have been given alphabet and literature. Too much emphasis can scarcely be laid upon the inestimable civilizing influence of wholesome literature in the African's native tongues. Self-respect, enlarged vision, wholesome occupation and recreation, and the stimulation of nobler impulses are all concerned.

**Greater Uniformity of  
Language**

Under the old conditions, with the contact between tribes too often only warlike, it has been but natural that each unconquered tribe should cling to its own distinct language. But with the coming of civilization more peaceful intercourse is possible, and with the spread of commerce and education there is likely to be a tendency toward more uniformity of speech. This is an end to be desired. Aside from other considerations, such as the closer union of African peoples, and facility in trade, there can be no doubt that a greater uniformity

<sup>1</sup>*Report of Deputation of American Board to South Africa, 1903.*

of language would contribute to the speedier advancement of Christianity in Africa.

The missionary methods best adapted to Africa are four in number, or, better perhaps, the method is fourfold—medical, evangelistic, industrial, educational. The four should be combined in every mission. No station is otherwise thoroughly furnished for the multiplied demands that daily press upon it.

**Fourfold  
Method**

Medical missions are everywhere most effective pioneering agencies. They are pre-eminently so in Africa. The frightful death rate of infants, supplemented by the mortality resulting from exposure, unsanitary conditions, and devastating contagions, is suggestive of the opportunity for the mission of healing. Africans are no exception to the rule that sick people always wish to be well, and are greatly influenced by those who treat them successfully. Moreover, they have been accustomed to associate medicine with religion, and do not resent the proclamation of the God and religion in whose service the physician practices his healing arts. The Africans presuppose that every man's power depends upon the power of the god he serves. Efficiency, then, on the part of the

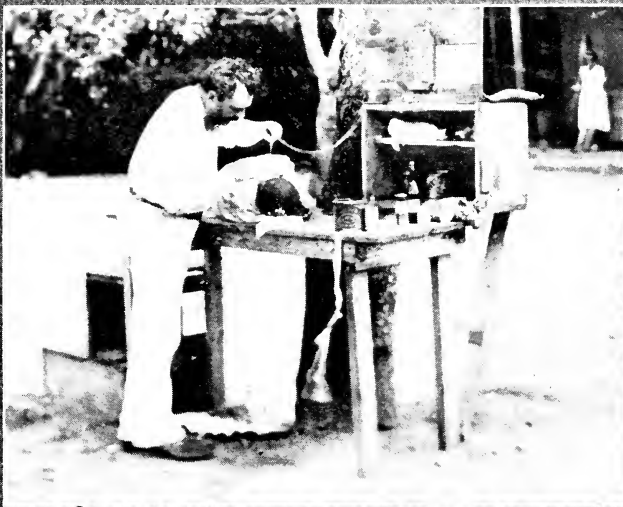
**Medical**

medical missionary directly preaches Christ to them, first, it may be, only as the white man's God, but afterwards, with patient teaching, also as the Saviour of the whole world, their Saviour from sin, the Great Physician of their souls. The medical missionary is often heralded from one district to another. Deputations from kings and tribes beg that he reside among them. With his fame goes the fame of his God and his religion. Perhaps in the beginning no other mission can do so much in winning favor rapidly as can the medical, if thoroughly imbued with the evangelistic spirit.

#### **Evangelistic**

Thoroughgoing evangelism rivals medicine as an introductory agency. Absolutely essential to all aggressive missionary effort, it is especially adapted to the impulsive nature of the African. The evangelistic spirit must pervade and dominate all missionary methods, whether medical, industrial, or educational, or Christianity in Africa, perhaps to a greater degree than among the more stolid races, degenerates to wooden formalities. To one keenly sensitive to the vast difference between the character of man at his lowest moral level and the conquering Christian, it might





## MEDICAL MISSIONS

AMERICAN MISSION HOSPITAL, ASSIUT, EGYPT

AN EMERGENCY OUTDOOR HOSPITAL, INHAMBANE



seem incongruous to preach to an audience of naked Pagans on "The Overcomers."<sup>1</sup> How much they have to overcome, of the world, the flesh, and the devil! But the intelligent eagerness of their faces, as they appreciate that over against the fact of their sins is the truth that a Deliverer has come, is evidence that there is no incongruity.

A peculiar feature of evangelistic work has developed with the employment of large numbers of natives at the diamond, gold, coal, and other mines. In order to insure regularity of labor and to prevent disorderly conduct and theft, the workmen during leisure hours are confined within enclosures called compounds. The opportunity for missionary work is a rare one. Distractions are fewer than exist in the ordinary native village, and an audience is ready at hand for public or personal work. Not all employers permit missionaries to preach to the workmen, but there is a growing appreciation of the fact that gospel preaching is a healthful factor in the industrial problem. An important phase of the compound mission is that those converted at the mines, after a few

**The "Compound"  
Mission**

<sup>1</sup> Revelation, ii, iii.

months of labor, carry the gospel back to their tribesmen, and form a nucleus for missionary extension.

#### Industrial

The value of the industrial mission has been proved wherever introduced. Tropical climate, dispensing with the necessity of clothing; abundance of fruits, vegetables, game, and fish (according to the section), dispensing with the necessity of much exertion, result in a lack of industries. "We are all as lazy as we dare to be." The advancement of the African, as with every other race, depends upon the number and quality of his wants. He progresses in the ratio that he is stimulated to increase and elevate his desires. Wants demand industry to supply them. Industry develops man. Naturally, at first, the industrial mission seems a superfluous waste of energy to the easy-going child of nature. He wonders what profit there is in knowing how to handle the adz, saw, and plane. Even after he has learned enough to do it, the embryo printer thinks it is foolish to stand all day "sticking lead letters in a row." But steady employment begets an interest and joy in industry itself.

#### Native Response

The usual experience of all societies employing the industrial mission is illustra-

tive of the deliberation with which the African adopts foreign ideas, and also the zest with which he pursues them when once approved. For the first few years in new districts pupils can scarcely be secured, but after native confidence has been won the capacity of the mission is continually overtaxed. Boys and girls grow eager for the industrial training, and their parents, to some extent, appreciate its value. The Lovedale Industrial Mission in South Africa had had, before 1900, the signal success of graduating from a four years' course 1,600 students. Aside from this number were the many pupils who attended the mission school but did not complete the course. Of the 1,600 graduates only fifteen, or less than one per cent., have reverted to heathenism. As has been cited, the work of the Livingstonia Industrial Mission is so appreciated by the British Central Africa government that a state prize is given for every graduate. All the basic industrial trades are taught. Native masons, carpenters, machinists, printers, telegraph operators, are transforming the appearance of the district of the recently "wild" Ngoni into that of a civilized country. It will also be remembered that the marvelous

growth of Uganda Christianity sprang from the evangelical industrial work of Alexander M. Mackay.

#### **Educational**

The educational mission, notwithstanding the opposition of many traders, soldiers, and government officials, is vindicated by its fruits. The great mass of pupils acquire little more than a rudimentary knowledge of the immortal three R's. The purpose—eminently practical—is to give the pupil an intelligent efficiency as a factor of the growing civilization about him, to create within him the beginnings of a wholesome thought-life, to stimulate him to employ his time so that he may escape somewhat the demoralization of idleness. Higher schools train Bible readers, evangelists, and regular teachers and preachers. Distribution of literature follows rudimentary education. It is then that the gospel takes wings.

#### **Capability of the African**

The exaggerated conclusions drawn from the premise that the sutures of the Negro's skull close at an early age, thus preventing the expansion of the brain, find ample refutation in the numerous products of the missions schools. The African as a race does appear to lack in the mental quality necessary to the mastery of mathematics

and abstract subjects. Many eminent linguists and *litterateurs* of other races whose mental capacity is beyond question have similar difficulty. That the peculiarity is, on the whole, racial instead of individual with the African is not conclusive proof of inferior mental caliber. The African is capable, teachable, and ready to learn, if he is led to an appreciation of the value of mental equipment. An American bishop and a governor of the German Kamerun, both well educated men, each speaking one of the three leading languages of the world, were obliged to depend for their interview upon a young African interpreter who was born in Paganism and educated at a mission school. Both testify to his fluency in their respective languages. The incident is not at all unique. Illustrations indicating the African's capabilities in this and other respects could be multiplied indefinitely. The universal experience of missionaries is that Africans are apt to be precocious when young and usually are then more eager to learn than in later life. But they do not necessarily lose capacity, and with proper environment and incentive their interest for intellectual pursuits does not abate. One out of every forty in mission day-

schools attends the higher schools—a fair proportion as compared with that maintained between the common schools and the colleges in the United States.

**No Educa-  
tional System**

It must be remembered that the African has no native system of education worthy of the name, as do the peoples of India, China, and Japan. Everything must be furnished him, from the alphabet upward. It is an astounding fact that a race which has had no educational antecedents should so readily respond to, and so worthily profit by, educational advantages.

**Evangeliza-  
tion alone In-  
adequate**

The practical value of educational missions may be inferred from an incident in the work of certain missionaries in the interior of Africa. They gave themselves wholly to evangelistic work without any effort at education, under the mistaken idea that proclaiming the gospel to those who had not heard was the beginning and end of missionary endeavor. After years of faithful preaching, the gospels were translated into the native language, when it was discovered that none could read!

**Civilization  
alone  
Inadequate**

The inefficiency of exclusively industrial and educational work may be illustrated by a single incident. Bishop Colenso, sharing the opinion often expressed by captious



critics, that civilization should precede Christianization, selected twelve boys from among the superior race of Zulus. He conscientiously and persistently devoted himself to their education and training without a word or suggestion of religion. They were bound over to him for a term of years on this condition. The susceptible Africans made rapid progress. When at last the good bishop thought they were civilized, he told them that all he had done was simply preliminary, and was incomplete without the immeasurably greater thing, acceptance of Jesus Christ as their personal Saviour, and of his gospel as the rule of life. The next morning all that was left of his promising protégés was their "civilized" clothing. They had donned their loin-cloths and gone—back to their Pagan homes, back to their Pagan customs.<sup>1</sup>

Some of the foremost officials of European governments in Africa have given the most unqualified testimony to the transforming power of Christian missions. It was a governor of Cape Colony who said that the frontier would be guarded better by nine mission stations than by nine military posts. Sir H. H. Johnston, ex-Con-

**Missions as  
Viewed by  
Government  
Officials**

<sup>1</sup>Frederic Perry Noble, *Redemption of Africa*.

sul-General of British Central Africa, says that it is "to missionaries rather than to traders or government officials that many districts of tropical Africa owe the introduction of the orange, lime, and mango, of the cocoanut palm, the cacao bean, and the pineapple. Improved breeds of poultry and pigeons, many useful vegetables, and beautiful garden flowers have been and are being taken farther and farther into the poorly endowed regions of barbarous Africa by these emissaries of Christianity. It is they, too, who in many cases have first taught the natives carpentry, joinery, masonry, tailoring, cobbling, engineering, bookkeeping, printing, and European cookery; to say nothing of reading, writing, arithmetic, and a smattering of general knowledge. Almost invariably it has been to missionaries that the natives of interior Africa have owed their first acquaintance with the printing-press, the turning-lathe, the mangle, the flatiron, the sawmill, and the brick-mould. Industrial teaching is coming more and more into favor, and its immediate results in British Central Africa have been most encouraging. Instead of importing printers, carpenters, store clerks, cooks, telegraphers, gardeners, nat-

ural history collectors from England or India, we are gradually becoming able to obtain them among the natives of the country, who are trained in the missionaries' schools, and who, having been given simple, wholesome local education, have not had their heads turned, and are not above their station in life. At the government press at Zomba there is but one European superintendent—all the other printers being mission-trained natives. Most of the telegraph stations are entirely worked by Negro telegraph clerks also derived from the missions.

“When the history of the great African states of the future comes to be written, the arrival of the first missionary will with many of these new nations be the first historical event in their annals.”<sup>1</sup>

What then of the night? Surely, it may be said of Africa, “The morning cometh!”

<sup>1</sup>Sir H. H. Johnston, *British Central Africa*.

# QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER V.

AIM: TO STUDY AFRICA'S CLAIM ON CHRISTENDOM IN VIEW OF THE INCREASING OPPORTUNITIES FOR EFFECTIVE MISSIONARY WORK.

1...*Conditions improving with the advance of civilization.*

- 1 In what ways is European control an aid to the missionary?
- 2 What evils is missionary work unable to suppress without government aid?
- 3 How does it aid the government in suppressing these evils?
- 4 Will it be enough to have these evils merely suppressed?
- 5\* What remains for the missionary to do after the government has acted?
- 6 What is the attitude of Christianity toward general education? toward commercial and political progress?
- 7 Compare the position of Islam with that of Christianity in these respects.
- 8 What factors will help the spread of education among Moslems?
- 9\* What effect will this have upon their attitude in religion?
- 10 What effect upon the slave problem has the building of a railroad in Africa?
- 11 What has been the attitude of the British government toward slavery?
- 12\* Try to picture the mental and moral outlook of an emancipated African slave.
- 13 What will have been his chances of acquiring anything of knowledge or goodness?
- 14 Under what disadvantages have missionaries formerly labored in fighting disease?

- 15\* In what various ways will the effectiveness of missionary work be increased by improved health conditions?
- 16 What has been the effect of Christian sentiment on polygamy?
- 17 What will be the effect of commerce and communication on the languages of Africa?
- 18\* In what ways does the spread of a language facilitate missionary work?
- 19\* Sum up the ways in which the opportunities for effective missionary work have improved in the last thirty years.

II...*The increasing possibilities of the various forms of missionary work.*

- 20 Give several reasons why medical missions are especially needed in Africa.
- 21 What Christian virtues are fostered by industrial missions?
- 22 Why is this form of missionary work especially needed in Africa?
- 23 What special difficulties has educational work to contend with in Africa?
- 24 Is it for this reason less needed?
- 25\* In your opinion, which form of missionary work does the most good in Africa—the medical, evangelistic, educational, or industrial? Give three reasons.
- 26 What should be the relation of the evangelistic to the other departments of missionary work? Make some practical suggestions.
- 27 Which does the most for the other, civilization for missions, or missions for civilization? Give reasons for your view.
- 28\* In view of the development of these lines of work, how do you think Africa compares with other fields in its opportunities for the investment of a life?

REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

I...Medical Missions.

- Ecumenical Missionary Conference, New York, Vol.  
II, pp. 188, 189, 198, 199.  
Noble—Redemption of Africa, pp. 551-561.  
Stewart—Dawn in the Dark Continent, pp. 267,  
268, 295.

II...Industrial Missions.

- Harrison—Mackay of Uganda, pp. 152, 153.  
Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, pp.  
146-154.  
Noble—Redemption of Africa, pp. 562-578.  
Stewart—Dawn in the Dark Continent, pp. 178-196.  
Verner—Pioneering in Central Africa, pp. 111, 292.  
World-Wide Evangelization, pp. 278-295.

III...Educational Missions.

- Ecumenical Missionary Conference, New York, Vol.  
I, pp. 458-461.  
Harrison—Mackay of Uganda, pp. 128, 131.  
Watson—The American Mission in Egypt, Ch.  
XXVII.

IV...Evangelistic Missions.

- Battersby—Pilkington of Uganda, Ch. XI.  
Jack—Daybreak in Livingstonia, Chs. VIII, XVIII.  
Matthews—Thirty Years in Madagascar, Ch. XVIII.  
Mullins—The Wonderful Story of Uganda, Ch. X.  
Pierson—The New Acts of the Apostles, pp. 251-254,  
267-279.

# THE RELIGION OF LIGHT

“The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.”

—ISAIAH ix: 2.



## VI

### THE RELIGION OF LIGHT

#### **Africa in Early Bible Story**

AFRICA, next to Palestine, is the country most closely connected with the early history of the Hebrew race, and Christians the world over love the sacred stories lived out so long ago in the valley of the Nile. A "grievous famine" caused Abraham and Sarah to go down into Egypt, and a famine impelled Jacob to send his sons for corn down into the continent where to-day the famine of the Word of God is "so sore in all the land." Then there are the exquisite stories, of Joseph, of Benjamin and the missing silver cup, of Jacob's meeting with his long-lost son, and of his dying blessings upon his children, of the baby in the ark of bulrushes, and of the man Moses and his nearness to God. There are the wonderful ones, of the plagues, and of Aaron and the magic rod. There are the solemn ones—the slaying of the firstborn, the haste of the passover night, the flight of the children of Israel, and the presence of God in the pillar of cloud by day and the pillar of fire by night. And there are the thrilling ones—

the crossing of the Red Sea on dry land, the pursuit by Pharaoh, and the terrible fate which befell his host.

**The Ethiopians in Israel's Later History**

The Ethiopians figure in Israel's later history. Under Shishak, king of Egypt, they participated in the invasion of Palestine in the time of Rehoboam.<sup>1</sup> The Ethiopian king Zerah attacked Asa "with an host of a thousand thousand, and three hundred chariots."<sup>2</sup> Ambassadors came from Tirhakah, king of Ethiopia, for the purpose of forming an alliance with Hezekiah. It was then that Isaiah uttered his prophecy concerning "the land of the rustling of wings, which is beyond the rivers of Ethiopia." Looking down the centuries he saw the gathering of the nations to the standard of Jehovah, and naturally reflected in his picture of the future the then current conception of the Negro: "In that time shall a present be brought unto Jehovah of hosts from a people tall and smooth, and from a people dreaded near and far; a strong, strong nation and all-subduing, whose land the rivers divide, to the place of the name of Jehovah of hosts, the Mount Zion."<sup>3</sup> The necessity of fighting against

<sup>1</sup> II Chron. xii: 2, 3.

<sup>2</sup> II Chron. xiv: 9.

<sup>3</sup> Isaiah xviii: 1, 7, after Prof. T. K. Cheyne's translation and Cambridge Bible.

the Ethiopians under Tirhakah delayed the designs of Sennacherib, king of Assyria, against Jerusalem.<sup>1</sup> Later, during the siege of Jerusalem by Nebuchadrezzar, Ebed-melech, the Ethiopian, rescued Jeremiah from the miry dungeon into which his own countrymen had cast him, and God in a personal message promised to reward his service to the prophet by delivering him from peril.<sup>2</sup>

New Testament history contains incidents relating to Africa which strikingly suggest occurrences recorded in the Old Testament, while other passages of greater significance indicate the ready communication at that time between North Africa and Palestine. Africa cradled the Messianic race, and it sheltered the infant Messiah; Africans peculiarly befriended Jacob, Joseph, Moses, and Jeremiah, types and prophets of the Saviour of men, and an African was the first to bear the cross of Christ.<sup>3</sup> "Dwellers in Egypt and the parts of Libya about Cyrene" were present at Pentecost.<sup>4</sup> Two Africans, Simeon, "who was called black," and Lucius of Cyrene were foremost prophets and teachers in the

**Africa in New  
Testament  
History**

<sup>1</sup> II Kings xix: 9.

<sup>2</sup> Jeremiah xxxviii: 7-13; xxxix: 15-18.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xxvii: 32.

<sup>4</sup> Acts ii: 10.

first missionary church.<sup>1</sup> Apollos, eloquent, mighty in the Scriptures, fervent in spirit, who taught diligently, spake boldly, and mightily convinced the Jews, was himself a native of Alexandria.<sup>2</sup>

**The Treasurer  
of the Ethio-  
pian Queen**

Four years after Pentecost the treasurer of the queen of Ethiopia proper (the Upper Nile region) was returning to his country from Jerusalem. The fifty-third chapter of Isaiah both attracted and puzzled him. But Philip "began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus."<sup>3</sup> He believed and was baptized. What he told his dusky queen and her subjects, how they received his message, and how many disciples were gathered in response to it can only be conjectured. Yet the fact of Christian communities in Ethiopia in the early centuries of our era adds to the interest of the incident told with minuteness of detail by Luke.

**Traditional  
Apostolic  
Labors**

According to tradition, early African Christianity warranted the labors of six of the Apostles, Matthew and Thomas in Ethiopia, Peter and James the Less in Egypt, Jude and Simon in Cyrene. Mark, the evangelist, is also said to have been a

<sup>1</sup> Acts xiii: 1.

<sup>2</sup> Acts viii: 26-40.

<sup>3</sup> Acts xviii: 24-28.





## EDUCATIONAL MISSIONS

AN OUTDOOR SCHOOL FOR GIRLS, IKOKO

A CLASS IN ARITHMETIC, ANGOLA

worker in Egypt, and to have become the bishop of Alexandria.

The good news was heard gladly. Within 200 years after Pentecost there were 900 churches in North Africa. The Mediterranean coast lands were evangelized, and the population of the cities from Egypt westward were as much Christian as heathen.<sup>1</sup>

**Good News  
Heard Gladly**

The rapid growth of Christianity did not preclude heroism. Early Christians in Africa courted rather than shunned martyrdom. This spirit often led to the placing of undue emphasis upon the merit of physical suffering, but it none the less indicated the depth and completeness of the surrender to Christ.

**Heroic  
Christianity**

Missionary zeal was also characteristic of the early African church. The first missionary training school was founded in Alexandria before 200 A.D. Three great scholars, Pantænus, Origen, and Clement, succeeded to the principalship of this institution. The first made long evangelizing tours. The other two abounded in teachings and writings that kept the heart

**Missionary  
Zeal**

<sup>1</sup>It should be kept clearly in mind that the populations of the coast lands of North Africa at that time were composed almost entirely of Jews, Greeks, and Romans, Egypt excepted.

of the church alive for missions. Their labors were supplemented by the practical and literary missionary endeavors of other North African church leaders, Tertullian, Cyprian, Arnobius, Augustine.<sup>1</sup> These giants of the early church performed one service which has laid a lasting obligation upon Christians of all lands and all times to carry the gospel to Africa. They made the earliest translations of the Bible from the original Hebrew and Greek into Latin; and the Vulgate, from which our English (authorized) version derives so much of its pith and color, was founded upon these translations.

**Missions to  
Negroes**

Impelled by the influence of such men, missionaries went out from Alexandria and other centers into Egypt, Libya, Ethiopia (including Nubia and Abyssinia), the island of Sokotra, and among the fierce tribes of the borderland of the Sahara Desert. This missionary movement extended through several centuries. The response which was met from the Negro and part Negro peoples to whom the gospel was thus carried is not definitely

<sup>1</sup>More than half of the twenty greatest names of the early church from 150 to 400 A.D., and a like proportion of Christian writings of the same period, were North African. Athanasius, partly Negro at least, was one of the greatest of the church leaders.



known, but aside from the permanent results in Egypt and Abyssinia, it is a matter of history that whole tribes were won to at least a nominal acceptance of Christianity.

The readiness of the early Christians to witness to their faith is illustrated in the circumstances surrounding the introduction of Christianity into Abyssinia in the fourth century. Frumentius of Tyre became the founder of the church there. Together with his brother Edesius he was taken captive at a Red Sea port and carried to the king of the country. It was not long before he was telling the people the gospel story, and thereafter he devoted his life to building up a strong church. He was aided in this work by missionaries from Alexandria, who volunteered for the field when he in person presented his cause before Athanasius in that city. Frumentius himself was made bishop of the new church, and later became known as "the Father of Peace." From that day to this the Ethiopian church of Abyssinia has been connected with the Coptic church of Egypt.

**Christianity  
in Abyssinia**

Viewing the foregoing facts from the standpoint of the twentieth century, it would seem that the fullness of time for

**Opportunity  
and Failure  
of the Early  
Church**

the redemption of Africa had come, and that to the early church was given the opportunity of the ages. But at the crucial point, because theological bickerings and personal rivalries supplanted spiritual teaching and unselfish devotion to Christ, the church failed. Sects multiplied. Party lines were sharply defined and bitterly defended. Ecclesiastical confusion terminated in civil strife. Rival sects fought each other to the death over disputed doctrines. The inevitable followed. "A house divided against itself cannot stand." It is deplorable that such fervor, such steadfastness, such scholarship, such broadminded statesmanship, such disinterested zeal in missionary effort as at first characterized African Christianity, should so quickly have come to naught.

**The Secret of  
Christian  
Vitality**

The growth and decay of the North African church vividly illustrates the fact that missions are not only the chief business of Christians, but that without the missionary spirit any sect, church, or individual Christian inevitably sinks into spiritual death. "Give or die" is the inexorable law over Christians. This truth was repeatedly enunciated by Christ. "Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abid-

eth alone.” “He that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.” So long as genuine missionary fires burned on the altars of the North African church it could defy every effort that imperial Rome put forth for its extermination. Tertullian had abundant warrant for first expressing the thought, “The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church.” From the midst of scenes of African martyrdom he wrote to the Roman ruler, “Kill us, torture us, condemn us, grind us to dust; the oftener we are mown down by you the more in number we grow: the blood of the Christian is seed.”<sup>1</sup>

The probability that gospel light would long since have flooded the Dark Continent, and that Islam would have made as little headway in Africa as in Europe, had the evangelistic fervor of the earlier type of Christianity continued its vigorous conquest, belongs to the saddening “might have beens” of these nineteen Christian centuries. It was when Christians forsook their missionary calling and devoted their energies to quarreling over doctrinal differences that they lost faith and spiritual vitality. Then the remnants of self-muti-

**What Africa  
Might Have  
Been**

<sup>1</sup> F. Piper, *Lives of Church Leaders*.

lated Christianity proved powerless before the aggressive and united Mohammedanism of the seventh century.<sup>1</sup> Then Islam found in Africa—the neglected opportunity of Christianity—an atmosphere most favorable to its growth, where it since has wielded a subtle and far-reaching influence.

**Stability of  
African  
Character**

It is sometimes said, and more often implied, that the black man of Africa has no stability of character, no virile qualities that can be relied upon for sustained effort in the face of adversity. The history of African Christianity effectually discredits any such broad inference. It is a fact of supreme importance in estimating the probable permanence of mission work in Africa that those churches in which the Negro element exceeded the Caucasian outlived those in which the reverse was true. The churches dominated by the Greek, Roman, Jewish, and other colonists of North Africa were all too quickly overcome by Islam. On the other hand, the Nubian church withstood Mohammedan fire and sword until the fifteenth century. The Ethiopian church finally became consoli-

<sup>1</sup>Aside from the Egyptian and Abyssinian Christians, exception should be made of the scattered remnants of Christianity. Little colonies of Christians, located here and there in North Africa, did withstand Islamism, some of them for many years.

dated in Abyssinia, where it has since maintained its organization. Surrounded by Mohammedans on all sides for more than 1,000 years, these Abyssinian Christians have kept them at bay. So strong has been their influence in the country that it is only within comparatively recent years that Mohammedanism has gained any considerable footing there.

The membership of the Coptic church of Egypt is composed of descendants of the ancient Egyptians. After a brief period of favor as a reward for having assisted the Mohammedans in overcoming the orthodox church, of which they were a sect, the Copts were subjected to persecution similar to that inflicted upon all Christian bodies. While some did not remain true, there were many who did, and for 1,200 years the church has stood uncompromisingly immovable against Mohammedan persuasion and violence, and at the close of the protracted persecutions has a thoroughly organized priesthood and a definite church polity. Its membership numbers about 650,000, and is in scattered communities throughout Egypt.

It cannot be claimed that the Abyssinian (Ethiopian) and Coptic churches of to-day,

**The Coptic  
Church**

**Ethiopian and  
Coptic Churches  
Semblances of  
Christianity**

inheritors of the early church though they are, are more than bare semblances of Christianity. Among some of the communities of the Ethiopian church Christian forms and doctrines are mixed with much that is Pagan. Both churches are in reality gross caricatures in faith and practice. The worship is formal and almost meaningless; the priests are often unlearned, and are extremely lax in morals, and the people are like the priests. Still, the very fact of their steadfastness to the little light they had, and that, too, amid severest trial, is indicative of what might have been true had early Christianity kept to its purity of practice, its singleness of purpose, and its simplicity of creed. It is indicative, also, of what may be true if enlightened Christians of other lands will but be faithful in leading these blinded wanderers back to the true faith.

**A Thousand  
Years of  
Neglect**

From the sixth to the sixteenth centuries the Christian church attempted nothing worthy of note for the Negro. Even had there been inclination, Islam, a menacing power, stretched across North Africa, and until the era of discovery opened in the fifteenth century there was no communication with more distant portions of the con-

continent. Prince Henry the Navigator (1394-1460) did instruct his West African explorers "to cultivate the Negroes, establish peace, and use their utmost diligence in making converts." But he permitted slavery in the "hope that by conversation with Christians the slaves might easily be won to the faith,"<sup>1</sup> and thus by stimulating greed instead of charity he paralyzed missionary motive.

Soon after the discovery of the Congo in 1484 the Portuguese opened missions along the great river. With but few exceptions the African seems to have accorded a warm welcome to the new religion. The fame of beads, charms, crosses, images of the virgin, censers and incense, and of the stately solemn service preceded the missionaries everywhere. They were often thronged with those eager to be enrolled in the new faith. Thousands were baptized, churches were built, and the pious in Portugal were thrilled with the missionary reports from the kingdom of the Congo. But alas! it was far from becoming a kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ. Baptism and superficial forms were substituted for vital piety. The Pa-

**Portuguese  
Congo  
Missions**

<sup>1</sup>C. R. Beazley, *Prince Henry the Navigator*.

gan remained a Pagan, having acquired little more than a new name<sup>1</sup> for his charms and his religion. 'This was about all that was left to the African of a great but mistaken missionary effort.

**Missions of  
the Roman Ca-  
tholic Church**

Since the consideration of Protestant missions is to occupy the following pages, it is proper at this point to mention the later work of the Roman Catholic church for Africa. During the centuries succeeding the fifteenth intermittent efforts were made in various sections of the continent, and with varying success; but the labors of the past forty years have been characterized by definite advance, and by a steady increase in the number of adherents to Catholicism. Native communicants were estimated in 1901 at 374,259.<sup>2</sup> A spirit of intolerance toward other Christian workers is too often a prominent feature of Roman Catholic missions, but the student of missions must recognize and give due tribute to those missionaries of noble character who, with deep devotion, have given their lives a willing sacrifice for Af-

<sup>1</sup> It was at this time that the introduction of the Portuguese word *feitiço*—charm or image—gave the name "fetich" to nearly everything in any way connected with the African's Pagan religion.

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopedia of Missions*. Revised Edition. Total of table, pp. 848, 849.



rica's salvation, as they have seen the way.

Protestant missions in Africa were an outgrowth of the missionary revival which occurred at the dawn of the nineteenth century. William Carey was a prime factor in this revival movement. Although told that when God wanted to convert the heathen he would do it without his help, Carey persisted in his consecrated enthusiasm, until, following immediately upon his impassioned appeals to "Expect great things from God; attempt great things for God," the Baptist Missionary Society was organized (1792). It was Carey's wish to devote his life to West Africa, but he was sent to India instead. Fourteen years later (1806) Samuel J. Mills and four other students of Williams College were driven by a thunderstorm from their place of prayer in the woods to the shelter of a haystack. There they pledged themselves to become foreign missionaries. The American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions was the direct outcome of the "Haystack Meeting." These incidents had a large part in arousing Christians everywhere to their responsibility to the heathen world. Missionary organizations

**Protestant  
Missions**

multiplied, and Africa shared in the effects of the awakening. With the opening of the nineteenth century, Protestantism had rediscovered the obligation of Christianity to Pagan Africa.

**Work Previous  
to 1800**

Previous to 1800 the only endeavors of Protestants in Africa which could show permanent if slight results were the Moravian mission to the Hottentots of South Africa, founded in 1737 by George Schmidt, and the Church of England mission<sup>1</sup> to the natives of Sierra Leone, begun in 1752.<sup>2</sup> A few organizations, the London, Scottish, and Wesleyan societies, inaugurated work in Sierra Leone, Liberia, and South Africa during the last years of the eighteenth century, but there had been time only to take bearings and to prepare for aggressive development. Between Liberia in the northwest and Cape Colony in the extreme south there was not at the dawning of the nineteenth century a single gleam of gospel light.

**Serious  
Difficulties**

Serious difficulties were encountered in

<sup>1</sup>This Church of England work was carried on under the direction of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

<sup>2</sup>There had been a few short-lived attempts toward the conversion of Africans before 1800. Two Lutheran missionaries entered Abyssinia in 1632, but were expelled through Jesuit intrigue. A Dutch minister preached to the Hottentots as early as 1662.

the early Protestant work. The climate of the northwest coast in that day, before the necessity of simple sanitary precautions had come to be generally recognized, was extremely deadly. In South Africa missionary efforts were often bitterly antagonized. To baptize Hottentots was to recognize them as men, and many of the Dutch farmers and traders, who customarily regarded them with contempt and treated them with brutality, could not abide such recognition. A notice over the door of at least one Dutch church bespoke the intensity of race hatred. It ran, "*Hottentots and dogs forbidden to enter.*"<sup>1</sup>

Notwithstanding Boer opposition, rapid progress in evangelization has been made in South Africa. From the standpoint of health always, and from that of government environment since 1806, when the British administration began, South Africa has been a favorable field for continued effort. Most of the different Christian denominations have there been repre-

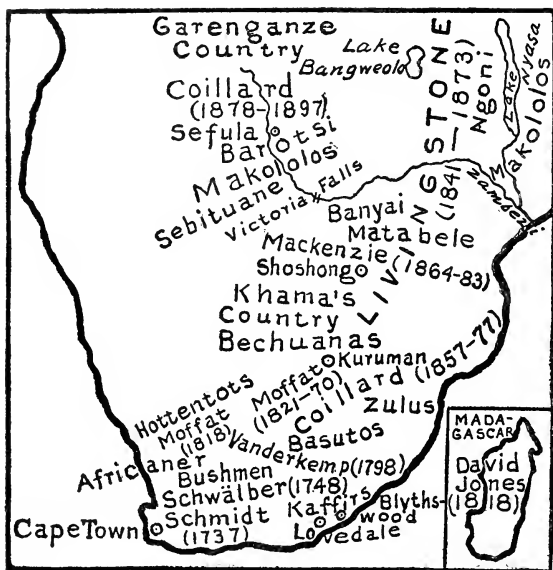
**Progress in  
South Africa**

<sup>1</sup>The inference must not be drawn that the race hatred of the Boers for the native was or is universal. There have been throughout the years many Boers who have been thoroughly Christian both in spirit and in practice. But the lamentable fact remains that the dominating sentiment has always been of the character indicated above.

sented through one or more missionary societies.

**Advance  
Northward**

The story of the advance of Christianity northward from the Cape is one of never-



SOUTH AFRICA.

failing interest. It is the story of the extension of the Moravian work among the Hottentots and Kaffirs, and to some degree among the Bushmen even. It is the story too of heroic missionaries alone and un-

armed braving association with savages goaded into desperation by the encroachments of the white man; of strong friendships between missionaries and native chiefs; of one chief in search of a missionary finding a missionary in search of a people, and of another chief advancing a gift of 200 cows upon the proposal to establish a mission for his tribe. It is the story of the winning of the Zulus, one of the finest of the South African tribes; of their remarkable advance toward self-support in their churches, and of their missionary labors for others. It is the story of Robert Moffat, of David Livingstone, and of John Mackenzie, of the conversion of Africaner with his Hottentots, of Sebituane with his Makololos, and of Khama with his Bechuanas. Again, it is the story of British colonial expansion to Central Africa, aided by the missionary statesmanship of Mackenzie. It is the story of missionary advance as far as Lake Tanganyika toward the heart of the continent. It is the story of changes in social and industrial conditions among the natives, which have been wrought through the agency of such institutions as the Lovedale Industrial Mission. It is the story of na-

tive Christians giving over \$22,000 in six years' time for the founding and extension of Blythswood Mission,<sup>1</sup> and of saying to the missionaries as they piled their first contribution of \$7,500 on the table, "There are the stones; now build!" And it is the story of the zeal of Basuto Christians for the cause of home missions.

**Native  
Evangelism**

Asser, a native evangelist, inspired the Basuto movement. He had done some missionary work among the Banyai. In one of his stirring appeals to his own people in their behalf he cried, "Oh, why could I not cut off my arms and my legs and make every limb of mine a missionary to these poor Banyai!" "Enough talking," said an old man at one of the meetings, "let us *do* something," and he placed a modest contribution upon the communion table. The people enthusiastically emulated his example. They pressed forward with their offerings until the sum of \$2,500 had been consecrated to the opening of the mission. Men and women volunteered for the work. Although their plan for the Banyai failed, these volunteers did not turn back, but accompanied Coillard, their missionary, to the country of the Barotsi, a thousand

<sup>1</sup>James Stewart, *Dawn in the Dark Continent*.

miles from home. Just on the border of Barotsiland, Eleazer, one of the evangelists, died. "God be blessed!" he exclaimed, when he knew that he must give up his heart's desire of preaching Christ to the Barotsi, "God be blessed! The door is open. My grave will be a finger-post of the mission."

The initial impulse for most of the early missions of the West Coast<sup>1</sup> was intimately associated with interest aroused by African slaves in Christian lands, a large proportion of whom had been taken from that section of the continent. Aside from the obligation of Christians to the whole

**West Coast  
Missions and  
African Slaves**

<sup>1</sup>Although in these pages attention is especially directed to the black races, the work of Christian missions in the Madeira Islands should be mentioned. Dr. R. R. Kalley (1838-46) was the heroic founder of the mission to the Portuguese peasants. He had won above a thousand to the Protestant faith before his home, library, and dispensary were destroyed and he himself was driven from the Madeiras by Roman Catholic persecution. Because of continued brutal treatment from the same source more than the original number of converts have been forced to leave their homes in the islands during succeeding years. In addition to the mission to the Portuguese, a Sailors' Rest and also a Missionaries' Home, where, in one of the most healthful of climates, all missionaries to Africa may find refreshment, are maintained. The success and enlargement during the last quarter century of all this Madeira work have been due to the earnest persistence of the Rev. and Mrs. W. G. Smart. For sketch of work in the Madeiras see *Story of Madeira*, by Della Dimmitt.

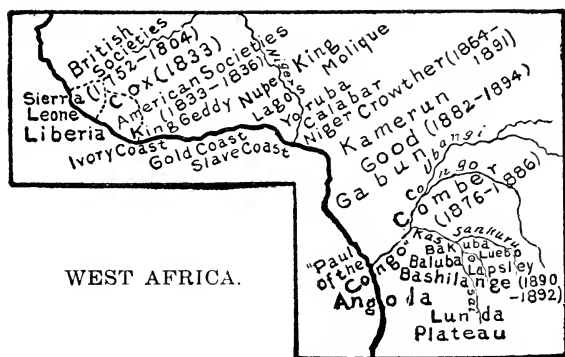
heathen world it had begun to be recognized that that obligation, so far as it related to Africa, was intensified in proportion to the incalculable crimes of civilization against Africa's people. This recognition had been tardy in coming. The sable sons of the continent which sheltered the persecuted Redeemer had waited vainly through long centuries to receive his gospel. Meanwhile, Christian peoples had surged in the Crusades to the rescue of an empty tomb. They had crossed the seas for the riches of the new world. They had sailed around Africa for the spices of India. But what little of the gospel they had carried to the Africans they had discounted by enslaving them.

**Colonies for  
Freedmen**

Still, this awful traffic was overruled for the good of Africa. The tragedy and pathos of slavery burned into the consciences of Christian people. The slave with his manacled hands pleaded in pantomime for the manacled souls of his race. It was to the unconscious appeal of the slave that Christian philanthropy responded with the Sierra Leone and Liberia colonies for freedmen. The providing of pastors for the colonists inspired the ambition to Christianize their Pagan kinsmen.



Thus in 1796 several British Nonconformist societies were led to establish missions in Sierra Leone. The Church Missionary Society followed in 1804. Liberia was likewise the magnet that attracted American Protestant societies to open work between 1833 and 1836. The organization of one of



these latter societies was inspired by the missionary zeal of a Negro;<sup>1</sup> the work of another was not only inspired, but for a time entirely supported by Negro Christians.<sup>2</sup>

It was but a natural sequence of the

**Missionary  
Extension**

<sup>1</sup>Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

<sup>2</sup>The missionary society which was the forerunner of the Baptist Missionary Union.

evangelization of the Pagans in touch with the colonists of Sierra Leone and Liberia that missions should extend to other sections of the West Coast. Sierra Leone, Liberia, the Ivory Coast, the Gold Coast, the Slave Coast, Lagos, Yoruba, Calabar, the Niger, Kamerun, Gabun, the Congo, and Angola indicate in the main the order of the beginnings of West Coast missions. The advance was slow, and the comparatively few stations appeared as faint candles in the midst of thick darkness. The introduction of "civilized" vice was not slow, however. On the West Coast particularly its influence has produced most baneful results. Nowhere else has the trade in slaves, guns, gunpowder, and gin been so destructive. Yet, in spite of all obstacles, native and foreign, some districts, pre-eminently Old Calabar, have been most radically transformed from pandemoniums of licentiousness, witchcraft, murder societies, and kindred evils, to orderly communities dominated by Christian sentiment.

**Advance to  
the Interior**

Within the latter half of the nineteenth century the various isolated missions along the long stretch of the West Coast became a more continuous line of light, through the addition of intermediate stations; and

from this line determined efforts were made to reach and win the interior. Up the Niger, the Ogowe, the Congo, and the Quanza missionaries pushed toward the inland peoples. The Hausas of the western Sudan, the Congo tribes as far as 2,000 miles up the great river and the tableland tribes across Angola and the divide between the Congo and Zambezi rivers to the Garenganze country have been touched, and some sections have been wonderfully illumined by the gospel.

Although not meeting with much apparent success, there have been a few attempts to do missionary work among the Pygmies. S. P. Verner, of the Kassai mission in the Congo basin, who has had the best opportunity of any missionary of studying the Pygmies and of testing their readiness to receive instruction, has found them "very slow to comprehend or act upon Christian principles." Still, he believes that "they have souls with light enough in them to see the way to their spiritual improvement and redemption."<sup>1</sup> Melville Frazer,<sup>2</sup> a missionary in the Gabun, has done some itinerating among them. He relates that

**Among the  
Pygmies**

<sup>1</sup> S. P. Verner, *Pioneering in Central Africa*.

<sup>2</sup> Melville Frazer, leaflet, *The Dwarfs at Home*.

stories illustrating the love of God and the sacrifice of Christ interest them very much. A company to whom he spoke appreciated particularly the incident of the little man Zacchæus climbing a tree to see Jesus. Their own diminutive bodies and their monkey-like agility in running up trees seem to have been thought of as parallels. One of their prayers to the supreme "Yer" is full of rude pathos: "Yea, if thou dost really exist, why dost thou let us be slain? We ask thee not for food, for we live only on snakes, ants, and mice. Thou hast made us; why dost thou let us be trodden down?"<sup>1</sup>

#### North African Missions

The story of North African missions is quite different from that of either South or West Africa. Here Moslem intolerance renders Christian work most difficult. It has been with much hesitation, therefore, that the few Protestant societies operating in North Africa have undertaken their work. One of these established a mission in Egypt in 1825,<sup>2</sup> another in 1854,<sup>3</sup> and still another began labors in Algeria in 1881.<sup>4</sup> Thus at intervals of a quarter of a

<sup>1</sup> J. Ludwig Krapf, *Travels and Missionary Journeys in East Central Africa*.

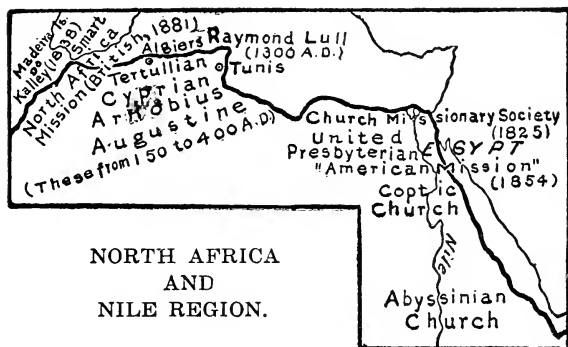
<sup>2</sup> Church Missionary Society. <sup>3</sup> United Presbyterian.

<sup>4</sup> North Africa Mission (British).

century have Protestants reluctantly entered this uninviting field. Comparatively little has been accomplished except in Egypt.

The work of the "American Mission" in Egypt is so distinctive and so eminently successful that it serves as an example of the typical mission for Coptic and Mohammedan Africa. Notwithstanding the diffi-

**The American  
Mission in  
Egypt**



culties of the field, this mission, fifty years after its founding, had 25,000 adherents and 8,000 communicants. Converts and constituency are mostly Copts, but there is reason for the hope that the methods employed will win with Mohammedans whenever converts from Islam can be assured of protection against the violence of Moslems.

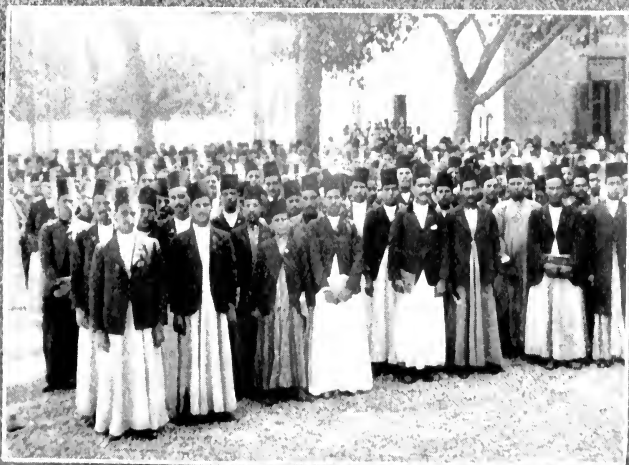
<sup>1</sup> United Presbyterian.

**Prominence  
of Educational  
Work**

The success of the mission is attributed to the prominence given to its educational feature, a feature which peculiarly meets the problem presented by both Coptic and Mohammedan ignorance and bigotry. The Assiut Training College is the center of this educational work. Teachers trained there are to be found in the day schools of almost every village of the Lower Nile. The enrollment in these schools reached 14,000 in 1905. The son of one Mohammedan governor is reported as being in attendance. It has been said, and evidently with justifiable enthusiasm, that the Training College alone "has done more for the uplifting of Egypt's millions than any other one force."

**Student  
Volunteers**

An organization at the Training College which answers to a Student Volunteer Band in 1905 numbered seventy-nine active members. As many as 201 students all told have been volunteers, 161 of whom were engaged in definite Christian work in 1905. Some of these have gone as far into the interior as the Egyptian Sudan. The fact is the more significant when it is understood that every volunteer enters upon Christian service at a small salary, when he could enter the government service at a large sal-



AMERICAN MISSION TRAINING COLLEGE, ASSIUT, EGYPT

THE STUDENT VOLUNTEER BAND

STUDENTS FORMING TO ENTER CHAPEL





ary.<sup>1</sup> The zeal of these young men gives occasion for a hopeful view of the future. It means that the Christianization of the Coptic church is but the preparation for the speedier conversion of North Africa.

The amount of Christian literature sold in Egypt by the mission indicates a widespread influence. Since 1854 over 1,000,000 volumes have been sold, at a total sum of \$200,000. The sales are now running above 100,000 volumes, at \$20,000 annually. The measure of such an influence is beyond computation, and there is warrant for believing that the consequent enlightenment will mean a great ingathering from Mohammedans as well as from Copts.

**Amount of  
Literature  
Distributed**

That there are many Moslems who would readily accept Christianity if religious liberty were granted them is positively known. Dr. Watson, who has lived in touch with the problem for more than forty years, says that every American missionary has personal acquaintance with Mohammedans who, in secret, avow their disbelief in Mohammedanism and confess their belief in Christianity. They are only prevented from an open profession by

**Mohammedan  
Intolerance**

<sup>1</sup>Thornton B. Penfield, "The Students of the Levant," in *The Intercollegian*, May, 1905.

the certain persecution which would follow.

Mohammedan fanaticism is so desperate that men will compass the death of their own brothers, either by open violence or by secret poisoning, rather than see them become Christians.

**Religious  
Liberty Would  
Mean a Chris-  
tian Egypt**

Religious liberty in Egypt would ultimately mean a Christian Egypt. When the British occupied the land in 1882 the number of Moslem inquirers became so large that a general ingathering seemed imminent. "All through Egypt Mohammedan inquirers appeared in considerable numbers."<sup>1</sup> It was naturally supposed that the British flag would guarantee freedom from religious persecution. But the British government chose not to interfere. The result was that the promising movement toward Christianity was soon checked.

**Khartum  
and Fashoda  
Missions**

Since the opening of the twentieth century the American Mission has extended its efforts into the Egyptian Sudan, establishing missions at Khartum and Fashoda, over 2,000 miles from the mouth of the Nile. In 1904 the work at Fashoda called forth the highest praise from the British governor-general.

<sup>1</sup> Andrew Watson, *The American Mission in Egypt*.

It is to be hoped that a mission possessed of as wise a management as that of the one which has won such success among the Copts and Mohammedans of Egypt may enter Abyssinia.<sup>1</sup> The return to the true faith of that virile race which for so many centuries defended its mutilated form of Christianity against Paganism and Mohammedanism would, as suggested concerning the relation of Coptic Christianity to North Africa, be certain to be an event of great significance as regards the conversion of East and Central Africa. In 522 the Abyssinians undertook the deliverance of fellow-Christians across the Red Sea from the persecution of the Jews. What might not be expected, then, if this superior people were delivered from the thraldom of a mere form of religion and led into the living faith and the glorious liberty of the pure gospel?

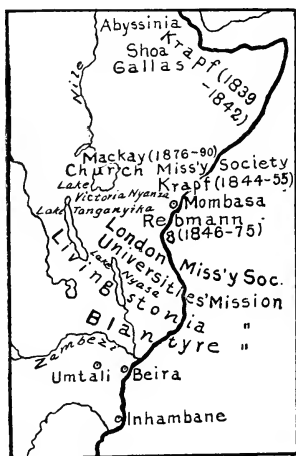
**Importance of  
Winning  
Abyssinia**

It was not until 1844 that Protestant missions were attempted on the East Coast. The new enterprise, which was destined to

**East African  
Missions**

<sup>1</sup>The Swedish mission has extended its work from the Red Sea coast lands into Gallaland. The officer next to the Emperor welcomed the missionary to the Gallas with the words, "The Bible is common to us all. Go your way and teach it." *Missionary Review*, June, 1905.

achieve such splendid results, but in which so many noble lives were to be sacrificed, most fittingly had as its pioneer representative the heroic John Ludwig Krapf. For over a third of a century there was practically no response from the natives to the



EAST AFRICA.

magnificent devotion of the missionaries. Then the mission to Uganda was inaugurated, Alexander M. Mackay becoming the leader of the Christian assault upon the Paganism of that most important East Central African kingdom.

Events of the years intervening between

the arrival of Krapf on the East Coast and the close of the nineteenth century present a chapter of almost unparalleled heroism and achievement on the part of missionaries. The examples of blind "Old Rebmann," for twenty-nine years, without furlough, and most of the time alone, keeping together his class of twelve, and of Mackay, standing by his persecuted converts, the one surrendering eyesight, the other life (though both men had been frequently summoned home), that the work begun might be sustained until reinforcements should arrive, are a type of all.

As a fruitage of the sublime living of East African missionaries, Uganda has become a synonym for extraordinary missionary success. Moreover, the work in this kingdom seems to have set the pace for a most remarkable group of missions; for, like Uganda, the Universities', Blantyre, Livingstonia, and London Society missions in the lake district further to the south, represent the highest degree of missionary statesmanship, efficiency, and success.

The five great East African missions named, like others in other sections of the continent, were inspired by Livingstone.

**Uganda a  
Type**

**Missions In-  
spired by Liv-  
ingstone**

Their founding and subsequent success suggest the mighty significance of his life and death for Africa. It was Henry Drummond who said that a score of forward movements could be directly traced to Livingstone. The great interest aroused by his travels flamed into action under the influence of his addresses, writings, and death. Impelled as by a common impulse, missions pushed inland, and there Christianity has had its greatest successes.

**A Colossal  
Sacrifice**

Thus in the nineteenth century did God, the Master of Missions, first draw a cordon of light-bearers around the Dark Continent, south, west, north, and east, and then, as if the advance upon the interior had been too long delayed, he thrust David Livingstone into the darkness of the central regions, that upon an altar high and lifted up—the more conspicuous because of its isolation—a sacrifice so colossal might set the civil, commercial, and especially the missionary forces of the world on the march for Africa's enlightenment.

## QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER VI.

AIM: TO DETERMINE THE TEACHING OF HISTORY FOR  
THE PRESENT DAY.

### *I...The lost opportunity of the early Church.*

- 1 What contact of Africa with the gospel do we find in the Bible?
- 2 How did Africa respond to the earliest preaching?
- 3 What sort of missionary spirit had the early African Church?
- 4 What success did it attain with the Negroes and in Abyssinia?
- 5 What causes destroyed the missionary spirit of the African Church?
- 6 How did the Negro as compared with the Caucasian Church resist Islam?
- 7 What was there in the Coptic Church to attract or inspire its followers?
- 8 What do you think would have become of you in such a lifeless atmosphere, and with such pressure from without?
- 9\* Sum all that has been lost to the Christian Church by the lack of aggressiveness in its North African representatives long ago.
- 10\* What will the lack of missionary spirit in Christians to-day cost the Church of the future?
- 11 Do you think that Africa would have remained sealed to Christendom for a thousand years if churches had been planted in Central Africa in the early centuries?

### *II...Effort and progress in different sections.*

- 12 What were the causes of the decay of early Roman Catholic missions?
- 13 Is quantity or quality most important in missionary work.

## 202 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

- 14 What were the causes of the success of Carey and Mills?
- 15 What do you think these men would undertake if they were living to-day?
- 16 Where and by whom were the first modern African missions started?
- 17\* Were the difficulties greater or less than those at the present, and in what way?
- 18\* For what reasons is it a good commercial investment for a nation to support missions?
- 19 Give four names of great South African missionaries, with something connected with the life of each.
- 20 What had slavery to do with the establishment of missionary work?
- 21 Indicate the spread of missions on the West Coast.
- 22 How has effort there been rewarded?
- 23 What is the chief difficulty as to missionary work in North Africa?
- 24\* What preparatory work is necessary in such a field before we have any right to expect results?
- 25\* What help will the evangelization of the Copts be to work among the Moslems?
- 26 To what is the success of the American Mission in Egypt mainly due?
- 27 Give three names of East African missionaries and tell something significant connected with each.
- 28 What great missionary principle does the life of Livingstone teach?
- 29\* Sum up in review the principal needs of Africa.
- 30\* Sum up the principal difficulties.
- 31\* Sum up the reasons for encouragement.



REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

I...Apologetics.

- Bryce—Impressions of South Africa, Ch. XXII.  
 Dennis—Christian Missions and Social Progress,  
 Vol. II, pp. 176-208.  
 Johnston—The Colonization of Africa, Ch. VIII.  
 Liggins—The Great Value and Success of Foreign  
 Missions, pp. 31-48.  
 Mullins—The Wonderful Story of Uganda, Ch. XIII.  
 Noble—Redemption of Africa, pp. 683-720.  
 Stewart—Dawn in the Dark Continent, Chs. XI,  
 XII.  
 Warneck—Modern Missions and Culture, pp. 149-  
 211.

II...Mohammedanism.

- Kerr—Pioneering in Morocco, 183-228.  
 Lane—The Modern Egyptians, Chs. I, II, III, IV.  
 Shedd—Islam and Oriental Churches, Ch. IV.  
 Stewart—Dawn in the Dark Continent, pp. 46-58.  
 Vincent—Actual Africa, pp. 3, 7, 14, 38, 127, 508.



# HERALDS OF THE DAWN

It is something to be a missionary. The morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy when they saw the field which the first missionary was to fill. The great and terrible God, before whom angels veil their faces, had an only Son, and He was sent to earth as a Missionary Physician. It is something to be a follower, however feeble, in the wake of the Great Teacher and only Model Missionary that ever appeared among men, and now that He is head over all things, King of kings and Lord of lords, what commission is equal to that which the missionary holds from Him? May I venture to invite young men of education, when laying down the plan of their lives, to take a glance at that of missionary? We will magnify the office! For my own part, I never cease to rejoice that God has appointed me to such an office.

—DAVID LIVINGSTONE.

## VII

### HERALDS OF THE DAWN

MEN are greater than their deeds. There is often more inspiration in the understanding of the spirit of a man than of the work that he does. Therefore the pioneers in the various fields of activity of modern African missions are here presented less from the standpoint of what they accomplish than of what they are. In most cases they represent the grain of wheat which falls into the ground and dies that others may reap the harvest. Whatever their individual achievement or apparent failure, their work is the essential foundation for later successes.

**Men Greater  
than Deeds**

The twelfth and thirteenth centuries presented two types of missionary, the crusader and the ascetic. Tens of thousands swarmed to Palestine to rescue the Holy Sepulcher from the Saracens, or to Africa in the hope of converting Mohammedans by force of arms. Thousands also flocked to the numerous orders of unarmed chiv-

**Mediæval Mis-  
sionary Types**

alry and devoted themselves to the redemption of captives in Moslem lands or to the direct evangelization of Mohammedans.

**The Morning  
Star of Modern  
Missions**

These two types of missionary, best represented by Louis IX of France, the pious crusader, and St. Francis of Assisi, "The Apostle of Poverty," are in striking contrast with Raymond Lull,<sup>1</sup> who may well be called the morning star of modern missions. He was the one mediæval missionary who was thoroughly modern in spirit. His life was devoted to Moslem Africa. He is, therefore, the forerunner of the Protestant pioneers in the Dark Continent. His was a sane, wholesome, rugged manhood. He combined the rare talents of "a powerful intellect and loving heart, and efficiency in practical things." His missionary methods were modern. He spent nine years in most careful preparation. He mastered the Arabic language and literature. When in Europe he made lecturing tours and secured the establishment of chairs of missions in the great universities. When on the field he centered all missionary effort in personal evangelism. "No more original missionary has ever been produced."

**Lull's Timidity and  
Courage**

One is surprised at Lull's timidity and

<sup>1</sup>S. M. Zwemer, *Raymond Lull*.

inspired by his courage. After engaging his passage and putting his books on board a vessel bound for Tunis such a terror seized him that he let the vessel sail without him. He was immediately overcome with remorse for his weakness, and, although prostrated by nervous fever, begged to be taken aboard the next vessel. Again his heart failed him, and again remorse tortured him, until he cried out, "Woe is me if I preach not the gospel." Finding no rest of spirit or recovery of body, he for a third time faced the sea, and was no sooner out of sight of land than his fever left him and he was girded with a mighty courage that never forsook him. The transformation of Jonah was not more complete.

Landing at Tunis, Lull proposed a comparison of religions, and the Moslem doctors with happy tolerance gathered about so reasonable a Christian. As long as their discussion was nothing more than a philosophical tilt they broke their logical lances in mutual good humor, but when Lull touched upon the false claims of Mohamed his opponents became intolerant. He was sentenced to death, but through the plea of an admiring Moslem was banished instead. Undaunted, he hid in the harbor

**Comparison  
of Religions**

and watched for an opportunity for further testimony.

**Type of Life-work**

The foregoing is a type of Lull's life-work. The Mohammedans tolerated his philosophical discussions and seemed to take pride in associating with a man of so remarkable an intellect. But when philosophy arrived at the point of Christian appeal they answered with stones, the dungeon, or banishment. Even at the age of eighty, when most men have retired, his youthful spirit continued to spur him on. It is surprising that he should have been permitted to pursue his aggressive course beyond fourscore years. His bold denunciations of Mohammed then resulted in his death by stoning.

**The First Modern Missionary**

The spirit of the first of the modern missionaries to Africa was typical of the church he represented; for, to the Moravians, missions are the chief business. George Schmidt,<sup>1</sup> having once undertaken his work, was not easily turned back by peril or difficulty. He landed in Cape Town July 9, 1737. The derision and contempt with which he was received was reflected in the enmity of the Dutch farmers fifty

<sup>1</sup>A. C. Thompson, *Moravian Missions*.



miles from the coast, near whom he began his labors among the natives. By the following spring this animosity had driven him thirty miles farther inland. Here he gathered Hottentots about him and soon had a school of over twenty-five children.

After four years of patient teaching Schmidt baptized the first native Christian, March 31, 1742. The ceremony occurred as he and his convert were returning from a trip to Cape Town, and, like the first baptism of an African by Philip 1,700 years before, was in a stream by the wayside. **First Convert**

The faithful and solitary missionary was not long allowed to carry forward his work. Many Hottentots had been converted after that first baptism, and the opposing faction among the Dutch did not favor a mission which could show such results. Six years, all told, Schmidt labored on in his loneliness at the station which afterward was called Genadendal, or Vale of Grace, because of the changed lives of the natives. By the end of this period Dutch hatred had grown so violent that he was forced to return to Europe (1743), and the Dutch East India Company never permitted him to renew his work. **Schmidt not Allowed to Continue Work**

Five years later John Schwälber volun- **John Schwälber**

teered for the difficult field. He went out at his own expense, toiled and suffered for the Hottentots, and in the eighth year among them died. This time the mission was abandoned. No one volunteered for the ill-fated place.

**Success or  
Failure**

No doubt the lives of these two missionaries were pointed to as total failures. The six years' service of one had closed in defeat; the eight years of the other had ended in death; there was no one to continue the work. But the little candle which Schmidt had lighted and Schwälber had kept burning still threw faint beams when, thirty-six years later, the mission was reopened, never again to be discontinued. One old woman brought a worn Dutch Bible which Schmidt had left with them. One man told how his father had bidden the people to welcome and follow those who would come from a long distance to "show Hottentots the narrow way by which they might escape from the great fire and find God." Later work has been built upon this waiting foundation. Since then, as one has aptly suggested, on the semi-desert table-lands of South Africa permanent transformations have taken place that illustrate the promise that "the wilderness

and solitary place shall be glad for them, and the desert shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing.”

John Ludwig Krapf,<sup>1</sup> the pioneer of East Coast missions, is the peer of the greatest of missionary characters. After several years of service under the Church Missionary Society in Abyssinia, he was driven from that country by Jesuit intrigues. Proceeding southward, he settled at Mombasa, on the East Coast, in 1844. In 1851 a missionary leader said: “If Africa is to be penetrated by European missionaries, it must be from the East Coast.” But the remark was made seven years after Krapf had conceived the plan and had set about its execution. Standing beside the newly made grave of his wife and child, a few months after arriving at Mombasa, he sent his challenge to Christians at home. “There is now on the East African Coast a lonely missionary grave. This is a sign that you have commenced the struggle with this part of the world; and as the victories of the church are gained by stepping over the graves of her members, you may be the more convinced that the hour is at hand

**John Ludwig  
Krapf**

<sup>1</sup>John Ludwig Krapf, *Travels and Missionary Labors in East Africa*.

when you are summoned to the conversion of Africa from its eastern shore." With the same thought Rosina Krapf had requested that her body be buried on the mainland instead of on the island of Mombasa.

Krapf was joined by Rebmann in 1846, and, being "pressed in spirit," he with his fellow worker began the series of missionary explorations which resulted in the discovery of the mountains Kilima-Njaro and Kenia. From reports of traders the missionaries also gathered that there was a great inland sea a few hundred miles to the west. Krapf likewise hit upon the correct theory—proved several years later—that the sources of the Nile and the Congo would be found in the vicinity of this inland sea. Soon the scientific explorations began which resulted in that marvelous series of discoveries of lakes and river courses, which in turn led to the unprecedented missionary movement into Central Africa. The initial impulse and many subsequent impulses toward the wonderful consummation were given by this missionary, "who never turned his back, but marched breast forward."

#### Difficulties

Meantime, difficulties increased in Krapf's missionary work. If he made a

tour to establish a new station he was set upon and robbed, his attendants were scattered and killed, and he himself was made a fugitive in a land of savages. At one time he was reduced to such straits as to eat gunpowder, and the next day to "break his fast" upon ants. If reinforcements arrived, the station soon became a hospital. "Our God bids us first build a cemetery before we build a church or dwelling-house, showing us that the resurrection of East Africa must be effected by our own destruction."

Krapf's one great vision was an "Apostle Street" of stations from east to west across the continent, also one from north to south, with each principal station named after an Apostle. At first he was confident of accomplishing his cherished hope, but it was not many years before he reconciled himself to hope deferred. "The idea of a chain of missions will yet be taken up by succeeding generations and carried out; for the idea is always conceived tens of years before it comes to pass. This idea I bequeath to every missionary coming to East Africa. . . . Our sanguine expectations and hopes of immediate success may be laid in the grave, like Lazarus, yet

**Apostle  
Street**

they shall have a resurrection, and our eyes shall see the glory of God at last." Prophetic utterance! He lived to see the mission established in Uganda, and while many were questioning over the early disasters, his voice rang true and with ever characteristic fire: "Though many missionaries may fall in the fight, yet the survivors will pass over the slain into the trenches and take this great African fortress for the Lord. . . . Be mindful of the memorable words spoken by the French Guard at the battle of Waterloo: 'The Guard does not surrender—it dies.' "

Carrying Out  
Krapf's Scheme

"We are but now (1899) carrying out the scheme which Krapf suggested," says Eugene Stock.<sup>1</sup> Indeed, with the Congo missions approaching those from the east, and with the Nile missions almost meeting those from the south, a great cross is being roughly described by transcontinental stations that would thrill the rugged soul of Krapf with enthusiasm.

Krapf labored, and others have entered into his labors. He seemed destined only to clear the way in thought and action for others to follow. All the great Central

<sup>1</sup> *History of the Church Missionary Society.*

African explorers, including Livingstone, were inspired by his discoveries.

In 1817, Robert Moffat,<sup>1</sup> a young man of twenty-two, entered upon his fifty-three years of service for South Africa. Early in his pioneer experience he pushed northward into what was then wilderness, and joining another missionary entered the country of the Bechuanas.

**Robert  
Moffat**

The field was a difficult one. The people cared nothing for the missionaries, nor for what they had to tell them. Their Pagan customs were more to their liking, and according to their mood they were scornful or revengeful toward the representatives of the new religion. They ridiculed the idea that any of them could ever believe the strange teaching, and they robbed the newcomers of what small possessions they had. Winning them evidently was destined to require a long siege upon their fortress of Pagan self-satisfaction: no open arms here; no waiting hearts, eager for the "God-palaver."

**A Difficult  
Field**

Moffat was the right man for the place. Nothing discouraged him, nothing baffled him. He was possessed of an unceasing

**The Right  
Man for the  
Place**

<sup>1</sup> John S. Moffat, *Robert and Mary Moffat*; David J. Deane, *Robert Moffat*.

purpose to do without flinching what he believed God intended he should do. He had been instrumental in preventing some savage practice, and the angry chief and his picked men came to demand that the missionaries leave the country. They were armed, and it was evident that they meant mischief. Moffat stood fearlessly before them, closing his reply to their demands with the words, "Our hearts are with you." Then he added, as he bared his breast, "If you will, drive your spears to my heart; and when you have slain me my companions will know that the hour has come for them to depart." Such bravery awakened in the savages enough admiration to cause them to leave their intended victims unmolested. "These men must have ten lives when they are so fearless of death," declared the chief to his followers. "There must be something in immortality."

**Varied  
Experiences**

The succeeding years were filled with varied experiences. The country was continually in a state of turmoil, due to tribal wars. The mission was often in danger. But the missionaries never lost courage. Moffat, thrown upon his own resources, was not only preacher, teacher, and translator; he was also doctor and dentist, carpenter



and blacksmith. He went on the first of his long evangelizing tours, braving both savage beasts and savage men, while Mrs. Moffat stayed behind with the children and braved perils quite as serious. At another time Moffat, bent on mastering the native tongue once for all, spent several months among distant natives, that he might not hear his own language spoken.

Mary Moffat was a constant inspiration to her husband. No missionary ever had a truer helpmeet. "Robert can never say that I hindered him in his work!" she said, with wifely pride, upon one occasion. "No, indeed," Moffat assured the listener, "but I can tell you she has often sent me away from home for months together for evangelizing purposes, and in my absence has managed the station as well or better than I could have done it myself!" Her faith was wonderful. Many years after, when Moffat was called upon to give up the companionship which had so devotedly been his, his heart uttered the one pathetic cry, "For fifty-three years I have had her to pray for me!"

**Mary Moffat**

An incident connected with Mrs. Moffat's prayers occurred at Kuruman, when, after eight years of toiling and praying

**Answered  
Prayer**

and waiting, the nucleus of a church was gathered. Moffat wisely would admit to membership only such as had proved themselves worthy through a period of testing. They baptized six and they partook of the first communion (1829). It was a memorable service. Over two years before, when matters had seemed almost as hopeless as at the beginning, Mrs. Moffat had written to a friend in England who had inquired whether there was not some special gift she would like: "Send us a communion service; we shall want it some day." The communion service reached the mission the day before that first celebration of the Lord's Supper by the native Christians. It was a happy providence. It was the token of answered prayer. It was an added link binding Christian England to the Christian Africa to be.

**Laying  
Foundations**

After the baptism of these converts Robert and Mary Moffat for forty-one years continued to lay the foundations of Christianity in Bechuanaland. There were more helpers as time went on, but Moffat was the leader always. He was at the head and in the heart of the work. He gave the people first one, then all of the gospels; then the whole New Testament and the

Psalms; and finally the entire Bible, in their own language. The natives learned to trust him. The chiefs confided in him. At times when new stations were to be started it was he who went to negotiate with the chiefs and to see that the missionaries were well received and comfortably housed.

Moffat's interest in Bechuanaland was perennial, and after his wife's death, which occurred in 1871—the year following their return to England—he more than once, in spite of his advanced age, offered to go back to Africa. So far as his strength allowed, however, his remaining years (he lived until 1883) were spent in stirring the home churches to a lively zeal for African missions.

**Moffat's  
Continued  
Interest**

He was a favorite speaker. His appearance always aroused great enthusiasm. It is said that at the London Mission Conference of 1878 Moffat, then eighty-three years of age, held the close attention of the assemblage while, in “a voice still strong and musical,” he talked upon his beloved theme. “The vast audience, upon discovering Moffat's presence, had risen spontaneously.” The report of the occurrence contains this tribute: “Whom see we com-

**A Favorite  
Speaker**

ing up the aisle? Who is the old man? Is it Beaconsfield? Is it Gladstone? No. 'Nothing but a missionary.' There is but one other person in the realm, I take it, to whom in the circumstances so united and enthusiastic a tribute would be paid—and to her because she is on the throne."

**David  
Livingstone**

In 1840, during Moffat's one furlough home, he told David Livingstone<sup>1</sup> that he had often seen, rising in the morning sunlight, the smoke of a thousand villages where the gospel had never been preached. That picture of spiritual darkness was never effaced from Livingstone's mind. In 1841, having completed his medical training, he reached South Africa, and proceeded directly to the regions beyond the outmost mission station, where for eight years he was occupied with the labors of an aggressive missionary.<sup>2</sup>

**Into the  
Interior**

With his thought always upon the "vast district to the north where no missionary had been," Livingstone pushed farther and

<sup>1</sup>W. Garden Blaikie, *Personal Life of David Livingstone; Story of the London Missionary Society*; Henry M. Stanley, *How I Found Livingstone*; Livingstone's Works.

<sup>2</sup>Livingstone upon his arrival in Africa had been made welcome at the home of Robert Moffat, and later he married Mary Moffat, the daughter.

farther into the interior, preaching and teaching as he went. Gradually this man of vision was becoming possessed of the passion to answer his own question, oft repeated during the years of growing interest in unexplored Central Africa and of awakening concern for the unredeemed millions of its people: "Who will penetrate through Africa?" His experience in the Makololo country, near the Zambezi River, settled him in a determination to make the attempt himself.

Slave gangs for the foreign (mostly Arab) trade were continually passing on their way to the coast, and Livingstone's heart was moved with a great pity for the sufferers from the traffic, while his very soul was fired with indignation at the promoters of it. He came to believe that its death-blow would be struck if the interior could be thrown open to Christianity and legitimate trade.

Livingstone's extensive journeys date from this period. It was for the purpose of demonstrating the practicability of a transcontinental caravan route that in 1853 he undertook the long and extremely perilous journey from Linyanti to the West Coast, and thence, returning across the con-

**Roused by  
the Foreign  
Slave Trade**

**In Journeys  
Oft**

continent, to Quilimane on the East Coast. Henceforth until his death in 1873 he was never at rest. After 1856 he was no longer directly connected with his missionary society, his explorations being carried for-



ward under the patronage of the British Government and of the Royal Geographical Society.

The thought of the civilized world was turned toward the Dark Continent. Liv-

ingstone's writings, which contain vivid descriptions of the life and customs of the peoples among whom he journeyed, appealed to Christian hearts to take them the gospel; his addresses when in England, passionate in their earnestness, appealed to Christian civilization to heal the "open sore of the world" by stamping out the slave trade; his life, so unreservedly given to a cause which called out all of the heroism of his noble character, appealed to every one everywhere to see Africa and her people as he saw them. Thus by overreaching the bounds ordinarily set for missionary activity did he become the more missionary in his influence.

Greatly honored as was the missionary explorer, deeply loved as was the man, the loneliness of his life was inevitable. One glimpse of the longing that sometimes swept over him is found in the record made in his journal just after his wife's death. She had accompanied him upon his second expedition, but had died at the outset. Her husband laid her body to rest under a great baobab tree at Shupanga, on the Zambezi. He wrote: "I loved her when I married her, and the longer I lived with her I loved her the more. . . . Oh, my Mary, my

**Honored and  
Loved but  
Lonely**

Mary! how have we longed for a quiet home since you and I were cast adrift at Kolobeng!<sup>1</sup> Surely the removal by a kind Father means that he rewarded you by taking you to the best home, the eternal one in the heavens.”

**Meeting with  
Stanley**

In 1871, in the midst of the exploration of the lake region, occurred the famous meeting at Ujiji with Henry M. Stanley. Stanley had been commissioned by James Gordon Bennett, of the New York *Herald*, to find Livingstone regardless of cost. “Take what you want, but find Livingstone,” were his orders. The world had believed Livingstone to be lost, but the world had simply lost sight of his strenuous life for several years. He was absorbed in a great undertaking, and his spirit was straitened until he should accomplish his purpose. Again his journal is the mirror of the man. On his fifty-ninth birthday he wrote: “I again dedicate my whole self to thee. Accept me, and grant, O gracious Father, that ere this year is gone I may finish my task. In Jesus’ name I ask it. Amen: so let it be.” David Livingstone.” After eleven months of hard-

<sup>1</sup> Kolobeng was one of Livingstone’s early mission stations. See map, page 224, for his main journeys and stations.



ship and suffering Stanley found Livingstone. The greeting was hearty, but characteristic. "I am thankful to be here to welcome you," was his response to Stanley's greeting. It was not the response of a lost man, but rather of one who was "bigger than anything that could happen to him."

Together the two greatest explorers of the nineteenth century explored Lake Tanganyika, and Stanley's account of their companionship abounds with expressions of appreciation of Livingstone's genuine worth. After taking leave of him Stanley says: "For four months and four days I lived with him in the same hut, or the same boat, or the same tent, and I never found a fault in him. I went to Africa as prejudiced against religion as the worst infidel in London. To a reporter like myself, who had only to deal with wars, mass meetings, and political gatherings, sentimental matters were quite out of my province. But there came to me a long time for reflection. I was out there away from a worldly world. I saw this solitary old man there, and I asked myself, 'Why does he stop here? What is it that inspires him?' For months after we met I found myself listening to him, wondering at the old man carrying out the

**Stanley's  
Testimony**

words, 'Leave all and follow me.' But little by little, seeing his piety, his gentleness, his zeal, his earnestness, and how he went quietly about his business, I was converted by him, although he had not tried to do it."

#### Livingstone's Death

Livingstone died at Chitambo, in Ilala, on the shores of Lake Bangweolo, May 1, 1873. His black servants found him at four o'clock in the morning upon his knees at his bedside, his candle still burning. The weariness and painfulness, the watchings, the hunger and thirst, the fastings, the loneliness, were all past. Livingstone, too, had entered the "best home."<sup>1</sup>

#### A Fragrant Life

Henry Drummond, after his travels through east Central Africa, testified: "Wherever David Livingstone's footsteps are crossed in Africa the fragrance of his memory seems to remain." Colliard wrote from the Barotsi country: "I have found the traces and memories of Livingstone here. . . . In Europe people admired the intrepid traveler, but one must come here, where he has lived, to admire the *man*. If some travelers have engraved their names on the rocks and tree trunks, he has en-

<sup>1</sup> Livingstone's heart was buried in Africa. His body was carried by his faithful servants to England and with much ceremony was laid to rest in Westminster Abbey.

graved his in the very hearts of the heathen population of Central Africa. Wherever Livingstone has passed the name of missionary is a passport and recommendation. Whether I will or not, I am Dr. Livingstone's successor. Thus it is that the first missionary that comes by is invested with the boots of this giant."

John Mackenzie,<sup>1</sup> the missionary statesman, and David Livingstone, the missionary explorer, in some respects reflect and complement each other. They began their careers under the London Missionary Society and among the Bechuanas of South Africa. Their intense zeal for every interest of the native led them into very large and useful activities in addition to the ordinary missionary program. The "by-products" of their labors were of greater moment than their direct missionary endeavor. Just as Livingstone did greater service by blazing paths through unexplored regions than he possibly could have performed in the usual method on a station, so Mackenzie multiplied the missionary significance of his life by promoting the expansion of British empire over the

**John  
Mackenzie**

<sup>1</sup> W. Douglas Mackenzie, *John Mackenzie, South African Missionary and Statesman*.

regions Livingstone explored. He thus saved native states from annihilation by the Boers and ensured the best colonial rule in the world to vast stretches of Africa.

**An Unpaid  
Administration**

Before the close of Mackenzie's residence at Shoshong,<sup>1</sup> he had assumed the responsibility of arbitrator between natives and Europeans. His practical suggestions as to the administration of native states under British protection led Sir Bartle Frere, High Commissioner of South Africa, to urge him to accept the office of Commissioner of Bechuanaland, at a salary of \$5,000 per year. But Mackenzie was not looking for an office. He would accept the appointment only in case it could be combined, as his unofficial administration had been, with his chosen work. Yet, while he was in accord with the principle that a missionary should keep free from secular and political entanglements, he was thoroughly convinced that the critical state of affairs demanded that "the highest type of missionary in Bechuanaland must assist the chief with whom he resides in political matters."

**A Continental  
Vision**

Mackenzie's vision, like Livingstone's, was continental. Necessarily his mission-

<sup>1</sup> See map, page 184.

ary statecraft centered about Bechuanaland, but the action concerning that country would affect all South Africa, and, indeed, all British Africa. The Boers were encroaching upon Bechuanaland. For England to withdraw her protection would be to hand over another South African race to the plunder of its cattle and the confiscation of its land. Therefore, at a time when the Governor of Cape Colony would not send an exploring expedition northward (although the Cape Parliament had made provision for it), because he was afraid it might lead to political obligations over native peoples; at a time when England would not accept Bechuanaland as a free gift from her people; before Joseph Chamberlain advocated imperial expansion, and before Cecil Rhodes had dreamed of his Cape to Cairo railway, Mackenzie had pleaded: "Let England come forward and avowedly take charge of and direct the northward progress of Europeans in South Africa." He saw clearly that his policy meant the occupation by England of as much of Africa as would not conflict with other European powers, but he longed for his nation to accept the responsibility that Africa might reap the benefits.

When Mackenzie took his first furlough, in 1883, there was little sympathy in England for his schemes for British expansion northward. Few knew much about the situation and fewer cared. With the conviction that he was contending for the welfare of a continent, he threw himself into the political arena of England as an educator upon territorial expansion. He wrote articles for the *Pall Mall Gazette*, the *Nineteenth Century*, the *Contemporary Review* and other leading periodicals. He interviewed statesmen like John Morley, Lord Shaftesbury, and Mr. Chamberlain. He advised with philanthropists like Dr. Dale and Sir T. Fowell Buxton. He buttonholed politicians. He haunted the lobbies of the House of Commons and addressed audiences throughout the land. Except for a short absence in South Africa, such was his work from 1882 to 1891. Had his policy been immediately adopted and vigorously carried out, as it was during his brief administration as Deputy Commissioner, it is morally certain that much injustice toward the native and much bitterness between English and Boer, and even the South African war itself, would have been avoided. His "territorial system" of gov-

ernment is to-day incorporated in the best features of British protectorates.

While Mackenzie suffered the usual experience of a prophet—rejection by those upon whom the working out of his schemes depended—he saw a beginning of that imperial policy which, through much indirection and consequent bloodshed, is finally fulfilling the purpose of his earnest devotion as missionary, political agitator, educator, administrator, statesman. Upon his first departure for South Africa, after arousing England to her obligation and privilege, the *Pall Mall Gazette* paid him a tribute that was even more fitting seven years later, when he reassumed his connection with the London Missionary Society as missionary at Hankey, Cape Colony. An editorial in this prominent paper extolling his work closed with the words: “Hereafter he will live in the annals of our empire as the man who, at a grave crisis, saved Africa for England.”

**A Prophet  
Rejected**

In 1875 Stanley's appeal for missionaries to be sent to Uganda fell under the notice of Alexander Mackay,<sup>1</sup> chief constructor in a great engineering factory near

**Alexander M.  
Mackay**

<sup>1</sup>*Alexander M. Mackay*, by his sister.

Berlin. "My heart burns for the deliverance of Africa," he immediately wrote the Church Missionary Society, "and if you can send me to any of those regions which Livingstone and Stanley have found to be groaning under the curse of the slave hunter I shall be very glad." Mackay's farewell speech to the Board of Directors is characteristic. "There is one thing which my brethren have not said and which I wish to say. I want to remind the committee that within six months they will probably hear that one of us is dead. Yes, is it at all likely that eight Englishmen should start for Central Africa and all be alive six months after? One of us at least—it may be I—will surely fall before that. When that news comes do not be cast down, but send some one else immediately to take the vacant place." Within three months one was dead. Within a year two more had fallen, and within two years Mackay was the only one left in the field. For twelve years he defied fever and persecution, the intrigues of Romanists and Mohammedans, the martyrdom of his converts, and attempts upon his own life. During all those anxious years he stood practically alone, consecrating his mechanical genius, his



acute diplomacy, his splendid scholarship, and his tireless energy to an ingrate people. He was finally driven out of the land where only a scattered following remained. He died in exile. His last letter responded to appeals to give up and come home in a manner that fitted his brave words to the committee twelve years before. "What is this you write—'come home'? Surely now, in our terrible dearth of workers, it is not a time for any one to desert his post. Send us only our first twenty men, and I may be tempted to come and help you to find another twenty." Alexander Mackay did not live to see the fruitage of his labors, but he has an enduring monument in the wonderful work of the Uganda mission.

Melville B. Cox was an invalid before he went to Africa. He had retired from the pastorate. Without strength to preach at home his heart yearned for the privilege of at least laying his body in foreign soil that his grave might be one sermon of the deathless passion of the Christ. The bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church had for seven years been looking for a suitable person who was willing to go to Africa. As a

Melville B. Cox

forlorn hope Cox was appointed. However unsuitable physically, he was eminently "fit" in willingness and zeal. "If I die in Africa you must come and write my epitaph," he said to a friend before going. "I will," was the answer, "but what shall I write?" "Write," flashed back the prophetic response, "Let a thousand fall before Africa be given up!" Cox arrived in Liberia March 8, 1833, and died July 21 of the same year. Four months and three weeks of service! As the pioneer missionary of his church,—

"Right in the van, on the red rampart's slippery  
swell,  
With heart that beat a charge, he fell forward as fits  
a man;  
But the high soul burns on to light men's feet,  
Where death for noble ends makes dying sweet."

If it should be said that Cox's life was wasted the answer is that there was no longer a dearth of volunteers for Africa, for Cox's zeal proved contagious, and from that day to this his heroic example has been an inspiration to the church which he represented.

**Adolphus C.  
Good**

Adolphus C. Good as cheerfully devoted his splendid physique to Africa as Cox his frail body. For twelve years (1882-94) he

extended and established the Presbyterian work in the interior of the Gabun. He combined in a rare degree the talents of a pioneer, evangelist, organizer, and educator. At the root of all his plans was faith in the native, as well as in the gospel which was to save him. Of his savage parish he said: "Out of these rough, unlovely blacks might be wrought beautiful images of Christ. They are material out of which saints may be made." This faith found expression in a masterful character that dauntlessly faced tremendous obstacles. "The emergency against which I shall most carefully provide is failure," he wrote as he was planning one of his most extended tours. "I know that treasure must be expended and lives sacrificed if this region is to be evangelized. . . . If this journey shall open a road for the light to enter this dark region into which I have penetrated a little way, I shall never regret the toil. I do hope God's people in America will see to it that I have not run in vain, neither labored in vain." In his last delirium he would at one time be preaching to the Bulu, for whose evangelization he had overtaxed his strength, "Listen carefully, and we will tell you about Christ"; and then praying to the

same purpose, "May good men never be wanting to carry forward the work."

**Samuel N.  
Lapsley**

The story of the life in Africa of Samuel N. Lapsley, as his diary and his letters tell it, reads like a vivid sketch of a summer trip abroad. His is a case where "genuine and exalted piety formed the warp and woof of one of the sunniest of characters." Born of a line of noble Southern ancestry, gifted with a brilliant mind, fitted by nature to move in the most select circles, Lapsley's choice of his lifework was based upon the fact that Africa was the worst field, and therefore the most in need of missionaries. Sailing from New York on February 26, 1890, he went out to found the Congo mission of the Presbyterian Church (South), the particular location being left to his judgment. After many months spent in essential preliminaries which included a visit to Belgium and an audience with the king, he at last began a settled work at Luebo, on the Kassai River, a most strategic center, as later developments have shown. The young missionary by this time had proved himself possessed of exceptional qualities of leadership. Now, with even greater zest because of his eagerness

to be about his Father's business in the more definite way of soul-winning, he threw his energies into building up the station. The future was full of promise. He was beginning to preach in the native tongue and was winning native confidence. Then there came a sudden break. No more breezy letters. No more cheery messages. In the journal on his way to Africa he had recorded this petition: "Let this Book be my time-book; God my Time-keeper." His life exemplified half of that prayer, and on March 26, 1892, before he had rounded out twenty-six years, his Time-keeper called. The eager, buoyant spirit, absent from the body, was present with the Lord.

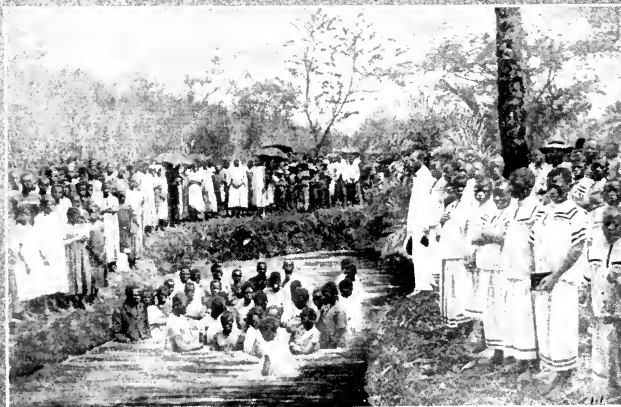
It was under the influence of a rare Sabbath school teacher that Thomas J. Comber, an English lad, resolved to become a missionary. Mr. Rickard was the personal friend of each of his scholars. Genuine himself, he taught them to be Christians of a hearty, wholesome type. "Mind," he would warn them at their class prayer meeting, "if I catch you saying anything you heard the minister say last Sunday, or repeating the petitions of a deacon at the prayer meeting, I'll stop you at once." Liv-

**Thomas J.  
Comber**

ing a consecrated life himself, he could appeal to their boyish earnestness. An Easter morning brought the lesson of the Great Commission. He told the class of his last-  
 ing regret because he was not a missionary, and then appealed to them, as his own boys, —would not one of them go in his place, do the work which he had been hindered from doing? There was no spoken response, but Comber's resolution was made. Afterwards, at the class meetings, his prayer always included the petition: "I want to be a missionary, to go into the darkness and bring Thy light into it, to tell the heathen of the Saviour who is waiting to help and save them as He has saved me." The decision for his lifework was reached when Comber was about fourteen. At twenty-four he was on the field (1876). At thirty-four his was one of those lonely graves which have been the stepping-stones of Christianity into interior Africa. It was a short life, but a life full of eager toil.

Vianga-Vianga, "restless activity," the natives whom he loved, and who loved him, called him. Stanley said of him, "Wherever your Comber went there was life and activity. Again and again, as I looked at him, he reminded me of the young man with





### EVANGELISTIC MISSIONS

A NATIVE WORKER PREACHING IN A KRAAL, EAST AFRICA  
BAPTISMAL SCENE, CONGO COUNTRY



the banner on which was the word 'Excelsior.' "

"A man going on this mission should have a head well screwed on," someone remarked upon his appointment to the pioneering work of the Congo mission, "and our Comber is that man." On one occasion six volunteers were wanted, but responses were slow. When Comber heard of this he wrote, "Six men, forsooth! Why, as Bentley says, 'If it were a gold mine we had discovered, it would be easy to find men ready to come to Africa.' "

He lived long enough to see the gathering of the first-fruits of the mission, for in 1886 occurred the "Pentecost on the Congo."<sup>1</sup>

"And what shall I say more?" For the time would fail me to tell of Wilson, the brave Southerner in the Gabun; the quaint and beloved Lindley and the saintly Tyler among the Zulus, Grenfell and Richards and Sims on the Congo, Waddell in Old Calabar, Bishop Steere in East Africa, and the grand old hero, Bishop William Taylor, who, though devoted to what proved an extreme or premature form of self-supporting missions, nevertheless held Africa be-

**Other  
Pioneers**

<sup>1</sup> The name, "The Pentecost on the Congo," has been given to the revival in 1886, when over 1,000 Pagans declared themselves Christians.

fore his church until he revived the enthusiasm that followed the death of Cox.<sup>1</sup> The women who have done what they could, and what men could not do for Africa, form a noble band.<sup>2</sup>

There have been other missionaries who have barely reached Africa; others whose work has extended over only a few months; others who have lived to serve but a few years; but they all have been as truly heralds of the dawn as are those who have seen the shadows flee away. "A queer country this is, where the only things of interest you have to show me are the graves!" said a newcomer. "Yes," was the answer, "but they are the milestones of Christianity to regions beyond." The spirit of those who give these milestones meaning is expressed in the words of a pioneer: "Though every step be over the grave of a missionary, Africa must be redeemed." In harmony with this sentiment is the exclamation of the Zulu: "O white

<sup>1</sup>H. C. DuBose, *John Leighton Wilson*; Josiah Tyler, *Forty Years Among the Zulus*; J. B. Myers, *Congo for Christ*; *History of American Baptist Missions*; William Dickie, *Story of the Mission in Old Calabar*; *Story of the Universities' Missions*; William Taylor, *The Flaming Torch in Africa*; and similar works.

<sup>2</sup>Mrs. J. T. Gracey, *Eminent Missionary Women*; and histories of the various general and women's societies.

men, nothing conquers you but death!" Lieutenant Shergold Smith, Thomas O'Neill, Bishop Parker, and others who fell as they were about to enter Uganda, each could have uttered the cry of Bishop Hannington's martyr lips: "I have purchased the road to Uganda with my life!" Said Bishop Mackenzie: "If I had a thousand lives to live Africa should have them all." His lonely death in Central Africa reduplicated his life, in that it gave to other men the impulse to offer theirs in the work of the Universities' Missions. There are scores upon scores who, in the various missions of the lake district and the Congo basin, and along the West Coast up to Liberia, have not counted their lives dear unto themselves. Their sacrifice has not been in vain. Their very martyrdom has hastened the day of Africa's redemption.

While it is impossible to tell of the achievements of the missionaries of to-day in Africa, the chapter must not close without paying a tribute to those who are doing heroic work: men and women who reveal in themselves that Africa demands of her missionaries the best education,<sup>1</sup> the

**Missionaries of  
To-day**

<sup>1</sup>The misconception is altogether too current that those whose mental equipment is insufficient for missionary work in China, India or Japan, *will do* for

finest culture,<sup>1</sup> the graces of adaptation, evangelistic power, and abounding zeal. Like Zinzendorf, they have "but one passion—He, He alone!" With Raymond Lull they realize that "he who loves not lives not, and he who lives by the Life cannot die."

Africa. On the contrary, it is a question whether it does not require more mental alertness and strength to grapple with the subtleties of unwritten languages and the intricacies of unsystematized religions, to give the one alphabet and grammar, to trace the other to its multiplied hiding-places, in strange modes of thought and deep-rooted customs, and to match it with the gospel, than it does to acquire written languages, however difficult, and to master well-formed religious systems, however profound. At any rate, the "will do" *will not do* for Africa any more than for any other field.

<sup>1</sup>This emphasis upon the importance of culture—that all-inclusive personal equipment—as a prerequisite in a missionary to savages may seem strange. But it does not seem strange to those who have seen the African in his native dignity, keenly sensitive to slight deviations from gentle instincts on the part of the white stranger. The hut into which one must crawl on hands and knees may be constructed of poles, mud, and swamp grasses; the interior may be devoid of stool, table, or couch, and the host be clad in a plentiful supply of palm oil and red clay, but "a man's a man for a' that," quick to discern the finer qualities of character.

## QUESTIONS FOR CHAPTER VII.

AIM: TO LEARN WHAT THE LIVES OF AFRICAN MISSIONARIES HAVE TO TEACH.

(It will be better to gain deep impressions from a very few of these lives than more superficial impressions from all of them.)

- I...1 Do you consider that Lull's extensive preparation was justified?
- 2 Would his courage have been more inspiring if he had not known fear?
- 3\* What do you think of the method he employed with the Moslems?
- 4 What, after all, is the principal lesson to you of his life? (Ask yourself this question in regard to each of the lives you study. The answer may be quite different from anything suggested by the printed questions.)
- II....5 What inspiration to take up missionary work in Africa had George Schmidt compared with what we have to-day?
- 6\* Compare his difficulties with those of missionaries at present.
- 7 What is your estimation of the value of his work?
- III...8\* Sum up the reasons for calling Krapf a great missionary.
- 9 Would his ideas have been just as valuable if he had not suffered such hardships?
- 10 How is Krapf's scheme being carried out?
- IV...11 What special difficulties confronted Moffat in his work?
- 12 Describe what you think were his feelings as he faced the chief and his armed band.

## 246 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

- 13 What should you say were the most prominent traits in Moffat's character.
- 14 What impresses you most in regard to Mrs. Moffat?
- 15\* Just why do you think the audience at the London Missionary Conference paid Moffat such a tribute?
- V...16\* State what you understand to be the life-work that Livingstone set himself.
- 17 What were his motives?
- 18 What do you think were the best things in life that Livingstone had to miss?
- 19 Was he justified in sacrificing all that he did?
- 20\* What do you think it was in him that made such an impression on men?
- VI...21\* Why was Mackenzie so anxious that England should annex Bechuanaland?
- 22\* Under what conditions have European powers the right to establish protectorates in Africa?
- 23 To what do you ascribe Mackenzie's life successes?
- VII...24 What attracted Mackay toward Africa?
- 25 Had the Missionary Society any right to waste life as it did?
- 26 What were the real results of Mackay's work?
- VIII...27 In what way was Cox's life multiplied?
- IX...28 What were the characteristics of Good that made him a great missionary?
- 29 In what way was the last message of Good prophetic?
- X...30 How was Lapsley peculiarly fitted for the Kassai Valley work?
- 31 How shall we connect the work of Lapsley with the future of the Kassai Valley?
- XI...32 How does the missionary call of Comber show us a rare opportunity?
- 33 What great life principle is illustrated in the lives of Cox, Good, Lapsley, and Comber?

- XII...34 What is your impression as to the type of African missionaries as compared with that of the great leaders in the home land?
- 

REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

I...Sacrifice and Heroism of Missionaries.

Barnes—Two Thousand Years of Missions Before Carey, pp. 205-208.

Blaikie—The Personal Life of David Livingstone, pp. 98, 99, 118, 119, 183-185, 236, 237, 336, 455, 456, 499-501.

Harrison—Mackay of Uganda, Chs. XI, XIII.

Jack—Daybreak in Livingstonia, Ch. XVI.

Mullins—The Wonderful Story of Uganda, Ch. I.

II...Prayer and Missions.

Mott—The Pastor and Modern Missions, Ch. V.

Murray—The Key of the Missionary Problem, Chs. IV, V, VI.

Pierson—The New Acts of the Apostles, Pt. II, Ch. I; Pt. V, Ch. VIII.

Speer—Prayer and Missions.

III...Missionary Statesmen.

Blaikie—Personal Life of David Livingstone, Ch. XXIII.

Griffis—Verbeck of Japan, Ch. XIV.

Liggins—The Great Value and Success in Foreign Missions, pp. 230-232.

Mackenzie—John Mackenzie, South African Missionary and Statesman, Chs. XVII, XIX.





DAYBREAK

Message to King Leopold and President McKinley from Ndombe, "King of the Bashibieng, paramount chieftain by appointment of Chimpellanga, of the Biomba, Bashilele, Bampende, Benafula, and Bindundu:

"Ndombe to the great kings and to their white children, according to the Word of God, of which I have heard much of late. Greeting:

"Ndombe requests the great white kings to send out to his country men who have good hearts to help the black people, to teach them, to keep the peace with them, and to be their friends. To such men our hearts are open, and behold! the land is theirs. When these things shall be done all shall be well in the country of Ndombe, from the waters of all the great rivers even unto the mountains of the setting sun."

—Adapted from Verner's *Pioneering in Central Africa*.

## VIII

### DAYBREAK

THE glory of past successes and the present optimistic outlook furnish a wholesome corrective to any gloomy impressions that may arise on account of the numerous and formidable obstacles to African missions. The following sketches are valuable because of their bearing upon the eminent fitness of Christianity for Africa. They present evidences of the present operating power of the Son of God in Africa as convincing as the casting out of devils and the reviving of the dead in Palestine.

**Christianity's  
Fitness for  
Africa**

Africaner<sup>1</sup> was a Hottentot desperado of Namaqualand. With a few hundred followers he terrorized alike the neighboring tribes and the Dutch farmers. The government at Cape Town offered \$500 reward for his arrest or death. It was under the patronage of such an outlaw that Robert Moffat opened his first mission in 1818.<sup>2</sup>

**Africaner**

<sup>1</sup> John S. Moffat, *Robert and Mary Moffat*.

<sup>2</sup> Moffat had been preceded by missionaries who had been driven out after a brief stay.

The white settlers had regaled the ears of the young missionary with the predictions that he would be made a target for the arrows of the small boy savages, his skin would be used for drum-heads, and his skull for a drinking-cup. One kindly mother-heart, with an odd mixture of harshness, yearned over Moffat's youth: "Had you been an old man, it would have been nothing, for you would soon have died, whether or no; but you are so young, and going to be a prey to that monster!" Within a year after these dire forebodings Moffat, with Africaner disguised as his attendant, was again among the Dutch farmers. He was taking the Hottentot chief to Cape Town to demonstrate to the government the marvelous fact that the savage had been supplanted by a new man in Jesus Christ. It had been reported that the missionary had fallen a victim to the cruel whim of his bloodthirsty patron. That the love of God should have conquered Africaner seemed beyond credence. Here was and is complete proof that God's power to transform life is not limited. The range of that power is from the uttermost sin to the uttermost righteousness. After five years of faithful Christian life Africaner

gave his people his death-bed charge (1822): "We are not what we were—*savages*, but men, professing to be taught according to the gospel. Let us then do accordingly. My former life is stained with blood, but Jesus Christ has pardoned me. Beware of falling into the same evils into which I have frequently led you. Seek God, and He will be found of you to direct you."

Samuel Adjai Crowther<sup>1</sup> is another conspicuous trophy of African missions. Born of the relatively inferior Yorubas, west of the lower Niger, he was captured by Fulah slavers in 1821, traded for a horse, consigned to a Portuguese slave ship, liberated by an English man-of-war, placed in a mission school at Free Town, Sierra Leone, taken to England to complete his education, sent as a missionary to his own people along the Niger, consecrated Bishop of the Niger in Canterbury Cathedral in 1864, transferred to his eternal reward December 31, 1891. Such, in brief, is the biography of an African slave and Christian freeman—one of the great missionary characters of the nineteenth century.

<sup>1</sup> Jesse Page, *Samuel Crowther*.

**Moolu**

The average, every-day commoner of Africa, when a true Christian, also presents a wholesome example. Drummond's journal records the fidelity of Moolu, one of his attendants in his journey through east Central Africa. Of the first meeting with this man he writes: "I cherish no more sacred memory than that of a communion service in the little Bandawe chapel, when the sacramental cup was handed to me by the bare black arm of a native communicant. And," he adds, with that simplicity and sincere humility which made his such a charming personality, "a communicant whose life, tested afterward in many an hour of trial with me, gave him, perhaps, a better right to be there than any of us."

**Moolu's  
Religion**

Drummond habitually held an informal Sunday evening service with his men, and Moolu sometimes "undertook the sermon." "He discoursed with great eloquence on the Tower of Babel. The preceding Sunday he had waxed equally warm over the Rich Man and Lazarus; and his description of the Rich Man in terms of native ideas of wealth—'plenty of calico, plenty of beads!'—was a thing to remember. I never saw Moolu do an inconsistent thing. He could neither read nor write; he knew only some

dozen words of English. But I could trust him with everything. He was not 'pious'; he was neither bright nor clever; he was a commonplace black; but he did his duty and never told a lie. The first night of our camp, after I had gone to rest, I remember being roused by a low talking. I looked out of my tent; a flood of moonlight lit up the forest; and there, kneeling upon the ground, was a little group of natives, and Moolu in the center, conducting evening prayers. Every night afterward this service was repeated, no matter how long the march nor how tired the men. I make no comment. But this I will say: Moolu's life gave him the right to do it. I believe in missions, for one thing, because I believe in Moolu."<sup>1</sup>

Paul, the "Apostle of the Congo," was another of these "commonplace blacks." The Rev. Henry Richards tells his story.<sup>2</sup> "There was one man, the son of a chief, who did all that he could to oppose the gospel. He would take his drum and some wine and begin to dance to call the people away from the service. The weak ones

**The Apostle of  
the Congo**

<sup>1</sup>Henry Drummond, *Tropical Africa*.

<sup>2</sup>Henry Richards, *Paul the Apostle of Banza Man-teke*. (A pamphlet.)

would sometimes go and join in the dance. The sound of the drum seemed to electrify them; it reminded them of Pagan times. Sometimes, when this man, whose name was Nloko (meaning 'a curse') could not draw the people away from the meetings, he would come in and drive them out by making a great commotion." But the time came when this Saul, "yet breathing out threatenings," heard the heavenly voice and experienced a radical conversion. "Nloko was baptized. I gave him the name of Paul, because his experience was so much like that of the Apostle. The man seemed to be full of the Holy Spirit." He was eager to preach. He asked for the hardest place, one where it had previously been impossible to gain admittance for the gospel. After some preparatory training he went to Kinkanza. The people would not receive him. He then pitched his old tent outside the Pagan town and began his siege. Cold and dampness and hunger were his companions, but he was steadfast.

**Paul's First  
Convert**

For months there were no converts. Finally one man dared to say, "I am a Christian." Immediately he was rejected by his townspeople. Then Paul had a neighbor. A small hut was built near his tent and the



new convert moved in. Gradually the little community grew. A chapel accommodating 300 people was built. This little company of Christians, just from Paganism themselves, were soon sending teachers to other towns and paying their expenses.

“All that Paul seemed to think of was souls; he dreamed of souls and how he could win them. Of course,” concludes Mr. Richards, “we have not many Pauls. He is a born preacher. No man’s prayers seem to help me as much as his. I am astonished at the man’s power. He preaches the gospel of the Cross. That is what breaks down the Pagan.” Before Paul died (1902), his church numbered 600 members, all converted under his personal evangelism. This number included none of the converts in the towns where his missionary teachers had gone. His people continue to carry the message across the Congo to their heathen neighbors, and its influence is widening.

**Passion for  
Souls**

King Khama,<sup>1</sup> of Bechuanaland, South Africa, is a living witness to the fact that the power of the gospel can make great and good men from material that many despise and in an environment that would test

**Khama**

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Wyndham Knight Bruce, *The Story of an African Chief*. See map, page 184.

metal of the finest temper. Having eagerly responded to the gospel message, for years he endured the bitterest sort of persecution. His father was both chief and sorcerer, and wished Khama to become his successor in the double office. Through innumerable petty annoyances, continual calumny and murderous treachery Khama bore himself as a dutiful son, except where filial obedience crossed godliness, with forbearance, gentleness, patience, and dignity. His steadfastness to Christ never wavered. The people were not slow to discover the superior quality of the son, and, after some years of conservative hesitation, chose Khama as chief in his father's stead (1872).

**Khama's  
Relations  
with England**

The country having been opened to trade under the protection of England, Khama, in 1895, visited Great Britain and made an "interesting and impressive progress through England and Scotland." With the humility of a truly great character, Khama recognizes and acknowledges the influence of Christianity and its exponents upon himself. At one crucial period in his relations with England he turned to Mackenzie, whom, as a loved friend, he welcomed again among his people after years of separation,

saying: "I shall lean on you as in the olden time; stop me if I go wrong."

The firm, straightforward simplicity of this South African "Alfred the Great," as he is sometimes called, may be illustrated by his position on the liquor question. It puts to shame the weak duplicity of leaders and peoples in lands which for a much longer time have been inheritors of the gospel. The white man's drink is prohibited from crossing the boundaries of Bechuana-land. Native beer is also abolished. These prohibitive laws are actively effective. They are rigidly enforced, and severe penalties are visited upon offenders.

**A Firm Ruler**

The white traders forced Khama to strenuous legislation—a bit of statecraft worthy the publicity it has received. Liquor dealers elsewhere are credited with pertinacity. Khama found that his opponents lived up to the reputation of the fraternity. Warning followed warning. Still the law was violated. Finally, tried beyond further endurance, Government, crystallized in Khama's figure, took control and launched a philippic. J. D. Hepburn, who acted as interpreter, gives the ultimatum as he heard Khama pronounce it: "Take everything that you have. Take all that

**Prohibition of  
Foreign  
Liquor**

is yours and go. I am trying to lead my people to act according to that Word of God which we have received from you white people, and you show them an example of wickedness such as we never knew. You, the people of the Word of God! Go! take your cattle and leave my town, and never come back again!"<sup>1</sup> On the ground of old friendship one dealer pleaded for pity. Khama flashed back: "Friendship! You know better than any one how much I hate this drink. Don't talk to me about friendship. You are my worst enemy. I had a right to expect that *you* would uphold my laws, and you bring in the stuff for others to break them. You ask for pity and you show me no pity. No; I have had enough of such pity. It is my duty to have pity on my people, over whom God has placed me, and I am going to show them pity to-day. That is my duty to God." And the drink went. To the British Administration he wrote: "I dread the white man's drink more than the assegais of the Matabele, which kill men's bodies and is quickly over; but drink puts devils into men and destroys their souls and their bodies forever. *Its* wounds never heal. I

<sup>1</sup>J. D. Hepburn, *Twenty Years in Khama's Country*.

pray your Honor never to ask me to open even a little door to the drink."

The struggle over the native beer making and drinking aroused deep antagonism. "At one time," said Khama, "I thought there was nothing but death in front of me. I told them they could kill me, but they could not conquer me."

**Suppression of  
Native Beer  
Drinking**

The years of state-building which have succeeded Khama's accession to the chieftainship have resulted in the conversion of an entire savage tribe into a peaceful, agricultural, Christian people. Houses have displaced rude huts. The home-thought has taken root. The Bechuanas are not all Christians. All Americans are not. The Bechuanas, however, are a demonstration of the effect of Christian missions. Some still cling to their Pagan ideas, although Pagan practices were long since abolished by law. To pass from Bechuanaland before Khama to Bechuanaland with Khama is like passing from Dante's Inferno to his Paradiso.<sup>1</sup>

**State Building**

The success in Madagascar<sup>2</sup> represents

**Madagascar**

<sup>1</sup> It will be understood that Khama rules only a part of Bechuanaland, his people being the Bamangwatos, a tribe of the Bechuanas.

<sup>2</sup> W. E. Cousins, *Madagascar of To-day*; J. J. Fletcher, *Sign of the Cross in Madagascar*; T. T. Matthews, *Thirty Years in Madagascar*.

the power of the gospel over a mixed race in which the Negro blood is present, but not dominant. The Malagasy are more Malay than Negro. Within four months after the first missionary party of six arrived in Madagascar five had died of fever. But David Jones, the one survivor, tenaciously held on, won the friendship of King Radama, and inaugurated a most marvelous work. The king admitted further missionaries on condition that some should be artisans. The introduction of skilled mechanics deeply impressed the Malagasy. After almost a century they still speak of Canham, the tanner; Chick, the smith; Rowlands, the weaver; and, above all, of Cameron, the master workman. The last named was a many-sided, inventive genius. He lived until 1875. When Queen Ranavalona decided to banish the missionaries Cameron secured a five years' delay of the sentence. The Queen did not care for any more "book teaching," but desired something which to her mind was more practicable. "Can you teach my people to make soap?" she asked. Within a week's time Cameron returned with a specimen of his soap—a very effective missionary agency.

The missionaries were expelled from

Madagascar in 1835. A summary of the fifteen years' work shows that the Hova language had been reduced to written form, the Bible had been translated, elementary school books had been prepared, several small Christian churches had been organized, 10,000 or 15,000 pupils had passed through the one hundred missions schools and 30,000 people had learned to read.

The quarter of a century from 1835 to 1862 is called in Madagascar "the time when the land was dark." This at least indicates an appreciation of the light which had been introduced by the missionaries and which had partially been eclipsed by their banishment. Persecution produced "a noble army of martyrs." Christians went to their deaths "with faces shining like those of angels." Not less than 1,900 persons were persecuted in various ways in 1849. Of the eighteen martyrs, four were of noble birth, and were burned.<sup>1</sup>

The more Queen Ranavalona persecuted, the more the Christians multiplied. Hill-tops, remote forests, caves and tombs served as meeting-places. After twenty-five years of persecution there were four

**"The Time  
When the Land  
Was Dark"**

**Christian  
Fortitude**

<sup>1</sup> Other special seasons of persecution occurred in 1835-37, 1840, and 1857.

times as many Christians as at the beginning. The missionaries found (1862) about 6,000 who not only had not given up their faith, but most of whom had made their confession during this reign of terror. Eight years after the renewal of the work the statistics of growth appear incredible. By 1867 there were 92 congregations, with 13,682 adherents; in 1870, 621 congregations and 231,759 adherents. Such rapid growth precluded thorough training as to the meaning and obligations of Christianity. But the significant thing is that it meant a definite break with Paganism and a readiness for the gospel. In 1895, after twenty-five years of further ingathering, there were 2,004 congregations, 96,000 church members, 120,000 in Protestant mission schools, and 375,000 adherents. With the final occupation of Madagascar by the French, in 1896, the Roman Catholics became the persecutors of the Protestant Christians and the number of adherents decreased. But the result has been that by the elimination of those who would not suffer for Christ's sake the standard of evangelical Christians has been raised. In 1902 there were 184,000 Protestants and 135,000 in the mission schools.



**Uganda**

Lest any should think that the responsiveness and steadfastness of the Malagasy to Christianity may be due to the slight proportion of Negro blood in their veins, the Baganda on Lake Victoria are cited.<sup>1</sup> They, too, are a mixed race, but remain predominantly Negro. In 1875 Henry M. Stanley sent from Uganda his famous "Challenge to Christendom." King Mtesa had asked for missionaries for his people. Would Christians respond to this cry from the heart of Africa?

**Character of People**

The people in whose behalf this challenge was sent were described by Stanley himself as "crafty, fraudulent, deceiving, lying, thievish knaves, taken as a whole." Women and children as well as slaves were property. Polygamy was common. The people were victimized by belief in witchcraft. Violence was rife. Punishment and death were often accomplished by fearful torture. Human life was held cheap. A subject might be shot simply to test a gun. Cannibalism was probably occasionally practiced. Human sacrifice was often a wholesale slaughter. Mtesa's father had been accustomed to sacrifice great numbers

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicles of Uganda; The Wonderful Story of Uganda; Mackay of Uganda; Pilkington of Uganda; History of the Church Missionary Society.*

of his subjects whenever religious caprice or personal vengeance dictated. Mtesa himself offered two thousand captives in sacrifice to his father's spirit, and later commanded a similar butchery in order to propitiate the evil spirit that was causing his own illness.

**Pilkington's  
Summary**

In 1896, less than twenty years after the advent of the first missionaries, Pilkington could write his remarkable and worthily oft-quoted summary: "A hundred thousand souls brought into close contact with the gospel—half of them able to read for themselves; two hundred buildings raised by native Christians in which to worship God and read his Word; two hundred native evangelists and teachers entirely supported by the native church; ten thousand copies of the New Testament in circulation; six thousand souls eagerly seeking daily instruction; statistics of baptism, of confirmation, of adherents, of teachers, more than doubling yearly for the last six or seven years, ever since the return of the Christians from exile; the power of God shown by changed lives—and all this in the center of the thickest spiritual darkness in the world! Does it not make the heart reel with mingled emotions of joy and fear, of

hope and apprehension? Well may Christian hearts rejoice with trembling as they hear of it! Well may they labor in prayers for such possibilities, either of magnificent success or heart-breaking disaster!"

Moreover, the Uganda church itself had its roll of native membership written in martyrs' blood. Its early history is a recital of the most sublime faith amid terrible persecution and torture. They had "trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonments—they were sawn asunder; were tempted; were slain; being destitute, afflicted, tormented (of whom the world was not worthy); they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. And these all, having had witness borne to them through their faith, received not the promise, God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect."

**Uganda  
Native  
Martyrs**

In 1904 the Church of England had in Uganda 43,868 baptized Christians (8,321 having been baptized during the year), 32 ordained native clergymen, 2,468 native evangelists and teachers, a cathedral, built at native expense, seating 4,000 persons, and 1,070 other places of worship, with a

**Uganda Church  
in 1904**

seating capacity of 127,000, and with an average Sabbath attendance of 50,000. Nearly 100,000 people could read and write and 250,000 were under religious instruction. All of this native work is financed by native Christians, and is practically self-governing. The bishop is the only European member of the chief council. Native evangelists and missionaries are being sent throughout the kingdom of Uganda and to surrounding tribes.

**"A Nation in a Day"**

"A nation in a day!" Into the somber, blood-stained tapestry of Pagan life the new thread of a mighty Love has been woven. This wonderful thread can be traced, now dividing and intertwining, now knotted and tangled and shredded, now, except to a keen eye, lost sight of, though only to reappear in clearer design, marred here by ruthless hands, stained there with martyr blood, but finally dominating the whole, until the fabric grows firm and enduring, and the pattern distinct and chaste and beautiful. As these thirty years pass in review one is conscious that the Word of the Lord comes to His own to-day as clearly as in His message to Zerubbabel: "Who art thou, O great mountain? Before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain."

And as the heart bows in deep thankfulness for the fulfillment of this promise in dark Africa there speaks through the silence the voice of Him who sitteth on the throne: "Not by an army, nor by power, but by My spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts."

In 1875 the Ngoni were a plundering, **Ngoniland** bloodthirsty tribe. They raided for sustenance and slaughtered for pleasure. They terrorized other natives of the region to the west of Lake Nyasa. The remnants of these almost annihilated tribes fled for protection to the Livingstonia Mission. This led Dr. Laws to propose to settle a missionary among the wild Ngoni themselves. Dr. Elmslie's story of his own twenty years' life among them reveals the awful depravity and brutality of this people.<sup>1</sup>

J. W. Jack vividly portrays the transformation after a few years of missionary work. **Transformation** "The rock of unbelief and indifference, which at first remained non-riven, in spite of repeated strokes, has at last been shattered. Both chiefs and people have become friendly to the mission. The national war-spirit is broken. The brutal raids upon the Tonga and other defenseless tribes

<sup>1</sup> W. A. Elmslie, M.D., *Among the Wild Ngoni*.

have entirely ceased. Spears and clubs are being exchanged for the Word of God. The lives of the missionaries are no longer in danger. The horrible practices of the native doctors are giving place to the arts of true medicine. Savage creatures who have lived all their days for plunder and profligacy, whose hearts have never known principle, or virtue, or decency, are being born again by a divine power, are giving up their degraded habits, and are sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed and in their right minds. All this, too, in little more than a decade of time! And without any secular force to help, with no aid whatever from army or civil administration, and with the persistent savagery of the land as an opponent! It is surely a triumph as splendid as any ever achieved by the force of arms. It is a change as stupendous as when the peaceful staff of Moses broke in shivers all weapons of war and the ten thousand spears of Pharaoh. It is a marvel of power, greater than any belonging to this lower world."<sup>1</sup>

#### Congo Basin

The typical African of the Congo basin also has shown a remarkable readiness to

<sup>1</sup>James W. Jack, *Daybreak in Livingstonia*.



TRANSFORMATION OF HOME LIFE

A NATIVE CHIEF AND HIS WIVES  
INTERIOR OF CHRISTIAN HOME

NATIVE HUTS  
CHRISTIAN FAMILY





receive the gospel and a staunch loyalty to the faith. The "Pentecost on the Congo" is no more a fact of history than is the unswerving faithfulness and missionary zeal of these converted Pagans—some of them formerly cannibals. "When an African will give up his superfluous wives, will reject an easy opportunity to steal, will confess a sin which entails sure and disagreeable punishment, will relinquish vengeance against a foe," there can be no doubt as to the mighty transformation in his life. And such Africans are adding to the Congo church daily those who are being saved. "The native Christians from the first have adopted as a cardinal principle of church membership that *every member* should personally engage in some form of Christian service."<sup>1</sup> This explains their abounding liberality, their self-support, their high standard of morals, their spirit, and their record of conquest. The Rev. Henry Richards, of the American Baptist mission on the Congo, answers the query as to "what kind of Christians the Africans make, if they really give up their Paganism and become civilized," by this statement: "We have fifteen hundred church members at

<sup>1</sup> John Bell, *A Miracle of African Missions*.

our station, and, as far as I can judge, we have as spiritual and devoted a church as you will find anywhere. As a whole, they compare favorably with any other body of Christians.”

**Remarkable  
Respon-  
siveness**

Verner points out that the Congoese are even more responsive to Christianity than are the Baganda. Among the latter the growth of the church has been a hundred-fold in ten years' time. In the Kassai valley of the Congo basin “the growth has been a hundredfold in five years' time, and this, too, when the political power, contrary to the case of Uganda, has not been vested in the government to which the missionaries belong. When Lapsley landed at Luebo (1891) there was not a Protestant native Christian in a thousand miles. Now there are nearly two thousand. There have never been more than ten missionaries actively at work there at one time, but they have been so besieged with calls from far and near that they have been physically unable to respond. The Baluba slaves, who once thought that Luebo [before missionaries came] was synonymous with all the horrors of torture and death, now hail it as the haven of freedom and peace. Where the murderous shouts of cannibals once

rang through the forest, the sound of the church bell proclaims the call to worship and the songs of Zion resound across the clearing.’”<sup>1</sup>

It is in the interior, beyond the vicious influence of corrupt civilization and demoralizing trade, that the African is most easily won to Christianity, and once thoroughly won endures hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. In less than a generation large districts such as those described have discarded barbarous practices, just as converts in Christian lands leave off bad habits, and have adopted the manners and some of the arts of civilization. Thirty years ago there was not a convert in all Central Africa, to-day there are over 60,000;<sup>2</sup> thirty years ago no churches and schools, to-day over 2,000 places of worship and instruction; thirty years ago no pupils, to-day about 300,000 receive religious and secular training; thirty years ago no native evangelization, to-day above 100 ordained and over 3,000 native helpers, who are carrying the gospel

**Africans of  
Interior Easily  
Won**

<sup>1</sup>S. P. Verner, *Pioneering in Central Africa*.

<sup>2</sup>These statistics are estimated from the latest reports of the Central African Missions of various societies. They are only approximate, but it is believed that they fairly represent the situation.

to their Pagan brethren. The forces are now organized in several strong centers. Christianity has gathered momentum. Who will attempt to prophesy the cumulative results that may reasonably be expected within the next generation?

**Christianity's  
Task**

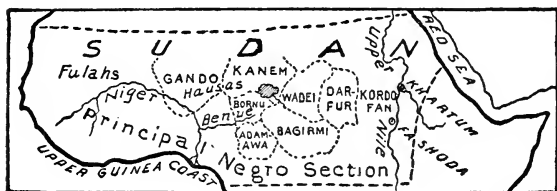
Notwithstanding the successes of the gospel, the task yet to be compassed before the Dark Continent shall be evangelized is one of incalculable magnitude. About 90,000,000 Pagans in the southern half and 50,000,000 Moslems in the northern half, like perennially provisioned armies in mighty fortresses, occupy the great mass of the continent, while but 9,000,000 "Christians"<sup>1</sup> stretch like a skirmish line along the coasts. Only here and there have advances been made upon the interior. The missions along the Congo, the Niger, the Nile, the Zambezi, in the lake district, and South Africa represent practically the sum total of interior work.

**Few Mission-  
aries in the  
Sudan**

The densely populated territory of the central Sudan, stretching eastward from the junction of the Benue with the Niger to

<sup>1</sup>"Christians," as here used, *include all white residents in Africa*, believers and non-believers, as well as black communicants. *Blue Book of Missions*, 1905.

the Upper Nile, is without a missionary except at its extremities.<sup>1</sup> Of its states, Bornu is larger than New York, Gando than Wisconsin, Kordofan than Missouri; Bagirmi is a little smaller than Ohio, Kanem than Kentucky, Wadai than Montana, Adamawa than Nevada, Darfur than the combined areas of Colorado, Kansas, and Oklahoma.



It is as if the United States, with her 82,000,000 of people, had one missionary in Maine and one in Texas, and not a ray of gospel light between.

If all of Africa and its population were divided equally among the present force of missionaries each would have a parish of 3,700 square miles—nearly half as large as Massachusetts—and 48,000 people. A similar division for native workers would give each 700 square miles and 9,000 people. Well might it be asked. "What are these among so many?"

**Present Force  
of Christian  
Workers in  
Africa**

<sup>1</sup> Three societies have recently opened missions in these two sections.

**Irony of Much  
Missionary  
Enthusiasm**

It was before a great farewell meeting to Sudan missionaries that Graham Wilmot Brooke strikingly set forth the pathetic irony of much of our "missionary enthusiasm:" "After many missionary meetings in various parts of the country, at which the appalling fact has been fully set forth that in the Sudan there are as many peoples as in the whole continent of North America, and all dying without the gospel; yet to such a field and to such a battle all that can be mustered are four young men and two young ladies! In temporal things this would be called a miserable fiasco; but as it is a missionary movement, and as obedience to Christ is the only motive which is urged, we are told to regard this as a 'splendid party.'"<sup>1</sup>

There is offered to the young men and women of the twentieth century no greater opportunity for noble service and superb heroism than the contest which is now on for Pagan Africa.

**The Contest  
for Pagan  
Africa**

Islam and Christianity are each striving for the prize. Islam, with its millions massed in the heart of the continent, has enormous odds in numbers and situation.

<sup>1</sup>Quoted by Engene Stock. *History of the Church Missionary Society.*

Moreover, Moslems are to-day stirred with a genuine missionary zeal, and are advancing to the conversion of Pagan Africa to the false prophet. Whether Africa is to be Pagan or Christian is not half the question. Shall Africa be Mohammedan or Christian? That is the question. It will be answered speedily one way or the other. It is most urgently necessary that Christianity outstrip Mohammedanism. As has been pointed out, when once converted to Islam, the difficulty of winning the African to Christianity is immeasurably increased. "Who will come to the help of the Lord, to the help of the Lord against the mighty?" Each must answer for himself, and quickly. The time is waxing late.

Next to the imperative necessity of winning Pagan Africa to Christ before Islam has spread over the entire continent is the urgent importance of evangelizing Moslem Africa itself. The Moslem has always proved peculiarly obstinate to Christian evangelism. Islam has enough truth to palliate an easy-going conscience and enough error to satisfy a corrupt heart. But the factor that most powerfully operates against the acceptance of Christianity

**Evangeliza-  
tion of Mo-  
hammedan  
Africa**

by Moslems is the fanatical intolerance of all "the faithful" against any one of their number who repudiates Islam for another faith. When the European control of Africa becomes so complete that religious liberty is secured Christianity will certainly make large conquest of Islam. The day of beginning that conquest is, however, not so far away as this condition would indicate. The results of the work of the American Mission in Egypt, of Robert College at Constantinople, and of Beirut College in Syria have abundantly proved that wise and persistent evangelistic and educational methods, even in unfavorable government environment, will ultimately win among Moslems.

#### **The Outlook**

The outlook for the religion of light in the Dark Continent is not to be measured by past or present successes. Splendid as these successes are, they point rather to future promise than to present achievements. For, while the outlook is as dark as sin and degradation can make it, it is as bright as the promises of God. "I, if I be lifted up, will draw all men unto me." "He shall have dominion from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth." "The earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea."







OUT OF DARKNESS INTO LIGHT, WEST AFRICA

A GROUP OF UNEVANGELIZED NATIVES

A THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY CLASS

Africa has other Africaners, Crowthers, Moolus, Pauls of the Congo, Khamas, other Madagascars, Ugandas, Ngonilands, and Congo districts waiting for the gospel message "to roll the darkness off that overshades the soul and cleanse the deeper dyes of sin."

**Africa's Latent Forces**

Representatives of the great Hausa nation of the Sudan themselves applied for the stations established among them. Here is a right of way into the Mohammedan Sudan, with its teeming millions of the best races in Africa. The conversion of the Hausas might mean more for the redemption of the continent than the conversion of the Baganda. The Hausa language, which is said to be worthy of place among "the world's imperial tongues," is the commercial language of the Sudan. It may yet become to the various Sudanese nations what Greek was to the Mediterranean peoples in the first missionary campaign.

**Pleas from Hausaland**

Verner vividly pictures the opportunity in the Kassai valley south of the Congo: "There is no mission field more full of promise, more urgent in its needs, than that in the great Kassai valley and the adjoining Lunda plateau. The Bakete, numbering thirty thousand, are all accessible

**Urgent Calls from Congo Tribes**

and at the doors of the great church at Luebo. The Bakuba, numbering, perhaps, four hundred thousand, lying north of Luebo, in the great Sankuru-Kassai peninsula, have thrown open their doors, and already one station has been planted among them. The Bashilange, numbering over one million, lying to the south of Ndombe, are ready to hear the Word, and have sent me earnest pleas all the way to America to come back to them. The Baluba, numbering three millions, to the south and east of Luebo, have already made the most numerous converts, and they would give to our churches a membership exceeding the entire Presbyterian membership in America in a generation, if only the workers were there.”<sup>1</sup>

**A New Field  
for Every New  
Missionary**

In every quarter of the Pagan interior where a mission has been established long enough for its purposes and work to be appreciated, chiefs and deputations from tribes ask for far more missionaries than can be supplied. Perhaps it would not be too much to say that every new missionary could go to a place which has applied for teachers if the imperative necessities of the

<sup>1</sup>S. P. Verner, *Pioneering in Central Africa*.

work did not require reinforcements of the established stations.

In 1904 King Geddy, of Southern Liberia, called on Bishop Hartzell, who at the time was inspecting Liberian missions. Age had told upon the visitor. He walked with halting, shuffling steps, leaning heavily upon his long stick. His flowing white beard and open countenance completed a picture that involuntarily suggested "Jacob leaning on the top of his staff." He had walked twelve miles in this painful manner in order to make a personal plea for a missionary to be stationed among his people. He is typical. An age-old people has staggered along for centuries in the darkness of Paganism, occasionally catching little gleams of light from the Sun of Righteousness, and knowing enough of the misery of darkness to beg now and then for a candle.

**A Typical  
Instance**

"I know of a land that is sunk in shame,  
Of hearts that faint and tire—  
And I know of a Name, a Name, a Name,  
Can set that land on fire.  
Its sound is a brand, its letters flame—  
I know of a Name, a Name, a Name,  
Will set that land on fire."

To those who look upon Christianity as only one of the religions of the earth,

**The Conver-  
sion of Africa  
as Viewed by  
the Non-  
Christian**

adapted mainly to the Caucasian race, it appears not only incongruous but futile to attempt the conversion of Pagan and Mohammedan Africa. To those who look upon religion as a mere inconvenient feature of human nature one religion seems as good as another—the one easiest for any one given people being the logical one, according to this fit-all philosophy.

**The Conversion of Africa as Viewed by the Christian**

But the Christian is unappalled by the number of Pagans or Mohammedans. As sure as God is God; as sure as Christianity is *the* religion which God cared so much to teach men as to come to earth in the person of his Son; as sure as all power in heaven and on earth is given to Jesus Christ; as sure as he commissioned his disciples, therefore, to go into all the world and preach his gospel to every creature; as sure as he promises to be with such all the days even unto the end of the age—so sure is Christianity of ultimate triumph in Africa. God waited a long time for the world to get ready for Jesus Christ, but in the fullness of time he came. God waited a long time for the preparation of India, China, Japan, Korea, and the islands of the sea, and for the readiness of Christians to carry them the gospel. So has he waited

for the message of salvation to be preached to the millions of Pagan and Mohammedan Africa. It is within the reasonable capability of the church of this generation fully to proclaim the gospel of Jesus Christ to all who have been dwelling in the darkness of Africa.

---

“Out of the shadows of night  
The world rolls into light.  
It is daybreak everywhere.”

## 284 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

### QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER VIII.

AIM: TO STUDY AFRICA'S CALL IN VIEW OF THE SUCCESS ACHIEVED.

- I...1 What real satisfaction do you think Africaner found in his former bloody life?
- 2 Try to picture his feelings after his eyes were opened.
- 3 Would such a man ever have been influenced by mere just dealings on the part of the settlers?
- 4 What is necessary for the redemption of such characters?
- II...5 What does the career of Crowther teach as to the possibilities of the African?
- III...6 How many Americans can you name whose lives have wrought more change in the community round them than did Khama's life?
- 7 What do you think of his attitude on the drink question?
- 8 Had he any right to infringe on the personal liberty of his subjects?
- 9 Sum up the value of his life both as to past influence and future example.
- IV...10 How much worth while does it seem to you to transform an average African into a Moolu?
- V...11 What lessons in regard to missions do we learn from the main facts of the work in Madagascar?
- VI...12 Mention occasions that might lead to violent death in Uganda in 1875.
- 13 Carefully compare the figures of Uganda missions in 1896 and for 1904, and note what they teach.
- 14 Can you think of any career more desirable than that of having shared in such a transformation?



- VII...15 What are the lessons of the work of Ngoni-land?
- VIII...16 In view of the way in which the Congo people have responded to Christianity, what do you think of the sin of withholding it from them?
- 17 How many Christians have you met in this country who seem to you the equal of Paul of the Congo?
- 18 What has been accomplished in thirty years in Central Africa?
- 19 Could more have been expected in view of the difficulties and scantiness of the efforts put forth?
- 20\* What is the need of Africa for Christian workers as compared with the United States?
- IX...21 In view of what has happened in Uganda and the Congo basin, what may we expect of Hausaland?
- X...22 What facts most appeal to you in connection with the need of Kassai Valley?
- 23 Do you know of any field in America or elsewhere of equal need and promise?
- XI...24 Put yourself in King Geddy's place and think how you should explain the failure of Christian America to send you a missionary.
- XII...25 What things in African paganism would arouse the pity even of non-Christians?
- 26 What things are there besides these that should appeal to us who are Christians?
- 27 What obligations as to Africa does the possession of Christianity lay upon us?
- 28 After all you have learned, what is there that you can and will do to hasten Daybreak in the Dark Continent?

## 286 Daybreak in the Dark Continent

### REFERENCES FOR PAPERS OR TALKS.

#### I...Establishing a Mission Station.

Bentley—Pioneering on the Congo, Ch. V.

Jack—Daybreak in Livingstonia, Ch. IV.

Johnston—Missionary Landscape in the Dark Continent, Ch. VII.

Moffat—The Lives of Robert and Mary Moffat, Ch. XXXII.

Noble—The Redemption of Africa, Ch. XVIII.

#### II...Special Providences in the Lives of Missionaries.

Blaikie—Personal Life of David Livingstone, pp. 83, 84, 175, 176, 184-199, 212, 289, 303, 343-345.

Hotchkiss—Sketches from the Dark Continent, Chs. I, III.

Pierson—The New Acts of the Apostles, Pt. V; Ch. III.

#### III...The Blood of the Martyrs.

Fletcher—The Sign of the Cross in Madagascar, Chs. XVII, XXII.

Harrison—Mackay of Uganda, pp. 273-284.

Pierson—The New Acts of the Apostles, Pt. IV; Ch. II.

Taylor—The Price of Africa, pp. 31-44.

Townsend—Madagascar: Its Memories and Martyrs, Ch. IV.

## APPENDIX A

---

### CHRONOLOGY OF AFRICAN HISTORY

This chronological table, compiled from *The Historian's History*, *History of Ready Reference*, and other standard works, includes only the most important dates. In Egyptian history, aside from those dates which could not be omitted, preference is given to those which are connected with larger Africa or with Bible history.

The prehistoric period in Africa is a fascinating puzzle to historians, because the first page of Egyptian history reveals a high state of civilization, indicating an indefinitely long period of advancement before that time. The ancient ruins of Rhodesia, southeast Africa, also are believed to date as early as 2,000 years before Christ. The earlier dates of Egyptian history can be given with only an approximate degree of certainty.

4400 B. C. to 4133 B. C. Ist Dynasty founded, by Menes, first authentic king, to whom tradition also ascribes founding of Memphis.

3900 B. C. to 3766 B. C. IIIrd Dynasty. Building of Step Pyramid of Sakkarah. "It is certainly the oldest of all the large buildings which have successfully resisted the action of wind and weather and destruction by the hand of man." The Great Sphinx of Ghizeh also assigned to this period.

- 3766 B. C. to 3566 B. C. IVth Dynasty. Sometimes called the "Pyramid Dynasty." Cheops builds the Great Pyramid. Brilliant age of art and literature. Statue of Khaf-Ra, the earliest statue to be preserved to the present day.
- 2700 B. C. to 2466 B. C. XIth Dynasty. Under the patronage of Sankh-Ka-Ra, last king of this dynasty, occurs the first voyage to Punt (probably Somaliland, East Africa), and to Ophir (probably Rhodesia, southeast Africa).
- 2466 B. C. to 2250 B. C. XIIth Dynasty. Usertsen III conquers Ethiopia, and is afterwards revered as its founder. Amenemhat III builds famous Labyrinth palace and constructs Lake Moeris as storage reservoir for Nile overflow 4,000 years before the nineteenth century engineering feat on the Upper Nile for the same purpose. Great age of art and literature. Immense activity in building.
- 2250 B. C. to 1635 B. C. XIIIth to XVIIth Dynasties. Before close of XIIIth the Hyksos, Shepherd Kings, invaders from the East, gain rapidly in power, and in the XIVth they establish their rule. Civilization brought to a standstill. There is possible warrant for the theory that the Hyksos invaders penetrated as far as West Africa, and that they to-day are represented in the superior mixed race of the Fulahs.
- 1730 B. C. (?) Hebrews come into Egypt.
- 1635 B. C. to 1365 B. C. XVIIIth Dynasty. Hyksos driven out. Egypt becomes a conquering nation. Activity in building revived; great temples of Karnak and Luxor, with their

avenues of sphinxes; famous Colossi of the Nile; palace and tomb at Tel-el-Amarna, in the ruins of which important discoveries of inscribed tablets relating to Palestine and other countries were made during latter part of the nineteenth century; obelisks erected to adorn Temple of the Sun at Heliopolis. One of these obelisks is now in London; another is in Central Park, New York. During this dynasty occur temporary overthrow of national religion and substitution of worship of the sun's disc.

- 1365 B. C. to 1235 B. C. XIXth Dynasty. Rameses II, the *Pharaoh of the Oppression*, and Menep-tah, the *Pharaoh of the Exodus*, belong to this period.
- 1235 B. C. to 1075 B. C. XXth Dynasty. Decline of Egypt begins. Phœnician colonization of Tunisian Coast probably begins.
- 1075 B. C. to 945 B. C. XXIst Dynasty. Solomon makes alliance with Egypt and marries a daughter of an Egyptian king (I Kings iii: 1.) Solomon secures gold from Ophir, probably identical with the gold fields of Rhodesia, southeast Africa. (I Kings ix: 28; x: 11.)
- 945 B. C. to 750 B. C. XXIInd Dynasty. Shishak becomes protector of Jeroboam, who has fled from Solomon's violence. (I Kings xi: 40.) He invades Judah, captures and sacks Jerusalem. (I Kings xiv: 25, 26; II Chron. xii.) Ethiopian domination begins through the capture of Thebes. Carthage founded.
- 728 B. C. to 655 B. C. XXVth Dynasty. Ethiopian rule of Egypt complete. Hoshea, King of Israel, makes alliance with Shabak (So of the Bible). Hoshea withholds tribute

from Shalmaneser, King of Assyria, and the captivity of Israel is precipitated (721 B. C.) (II Kings xvii: 4-6.) Tirhakah, Ethiopian king of Egypt, makes alliance with Hezekiah against Sennacherib, King of Assyria. (II Kings xix: 9.) End of Ethiopian rule. Assyrian domination begins.

655 B. C. to 527 B. C. XXVIth Dynasty. Under Psamthek I, 200,000 Egyptian and Libyan soldiers desert and go into Ethiopia. Impossible to estimate effect of this migration upon race characteristics of later Ethiopians. Commercial treaties with the Greeks. Nechoh II endeavors to reconstruct canal between the Nile and the Red Sea. Under his patronage Phœnician sailors circumnavigate Africa. He defeats Josiah, King of Judah, at battle of Megiddo. (608 B. C.) (II Kings xxiii: 29; II Chron. xxxv: 21-24.) Uah-ab-Ra (Pharaoh-Hophra of the Bible) makes an alliance with Zedekiah, King of Judah, against Nebuchadrezzar, King of Babylon. Zedekiah revolts against Babylon and the captivity of Judah follows (586 B. C.) (II Chron. xxxvi: 20.) Assyrian domination ends.

525 B. C. to 405 B. C. XXVIIth Dynasty. Egypt becomes a Persian province under Cambyeses, King of Persia.

340 B. C. to 332 B. C. XXXIst Dynasty. Alexander the Great closes this period by finally overthrowing the Persian power in Egypt. Greek dominion begins. Alexandria is founded.

323 B. C. to 30 B. C. XXXIIIrd Dynasty. Ptolemy Soter, one of Alexander's generals, receives

Egypt in the division of Macedonian Empire, and becomes founder of dynasty. Greek genius and culture contribute toward making earlier part of period the highest of Egyptian prosperity. Alexandria becomes greatest city in world. Alexandrian museum and libraries founded. Septuagint version of the Hebrew Scriptures made. Manetho's history of ancient Egyptian kings written. Euclid becomes head of school of mathematics at Alexandria. Ptolemaic system of astronomy propounded. Dominion of Ptolemies extended southward. Parts of Abyssinia held for a time. Obelisks still standing in Aksum believed to have been set up about 300 B. C. Part of Alexandria burned by Julius Cæsar, and the museum library of 400,000 volumes consumed. Cleopatra, last of Ptolemies, infatuates Mark Antony. After Battle of Actium Roman domination begins. Roman colonization extends over North African coast lands.

30 A. D. Christianity probably introduced into Africa by visitors at Pentecost.

150 A. D. to 400 A. D. Founding of the Christian College, or Missionary Training School, at Alexandria; Pantæus, Origen, Clement, successive principals. Christianity flourishes in North Africa. At various times Roman persecutions of African Christians. Period of African leadership in early Christian church: Tertullian, Cyprian, Athanasius, Arnobius, Augustine and others. Introduction of Christianity into Abyssinia and other sections to the south of Egypt and the Mediterranean coast lands.

- 522 A. D. Extension of Abyssinian rule over section of southern Arabia for purpose of protecting Christians against Jewish persecutions. Continues for forty years.
- 640 A. D. to 1000 A. D. Moslem conquest of Egypt and North Africa. Political, religious, and racial domination begins. Reputed destruction by Mohammedans of Alexandrian library of 700,000 volumes. Arabs in East Africa.
- 1100 A. D. to 1300 A. D. Era of European awakening to missionary endeavor. Organization of numerous philanthropic orders for the rescue of Christian captives in Moslem lands. Africa shares in the results. Order of Franciscan monks originated by St. Francis of Assisi, who himself preaches to the Saracens in Egypt. Two hundred each of Franciscans and Dominicans lose their lives in missionary work in North Africa. Louis IX, the Crusader of France, leads the Seventh Crusade as a militant missionary movement against the Saracens in Egypt, and meets defeat at Cairo. He also leads a later crusade for the same purpose against Tunis, and again meets defeat, and dies. Raymond Lull devotes his life to missionary work among Moslems of North Africa.
- 1394 A. D. to 1487 A. D. West Coast discoveries under patronage of Prince Henry the Navigator. Discovery of Congo River (1484). Discovery of Cape of Good Hope (1487).
- 1490 to 1540. Modern rediscovery of Abyssinia by Portuguese. Embassies exchanged. Portuguese give assistance to Abyssinia against Mohammedans.
- 1497-8. Vasco da Gama rounds Cape, touches at East Coast points and proceeds to India. Portu-



guese settlements on East and West coasts begin soon after this time.

1517. Turkish occupation of Egypt.

1600 to 1700. Individual explorations of Senegambia region by English and French. Founding of trading posts in same section and along Guinea Coast. Dutch occupation of Cape of Good Hope (1652).

1737. Beginning of missionary work in South Africa. George Schmidt.

1768. Rediscovery of headwaters of Blue Nile by James Bruce.

1788 to 1830. Organization of the African Association. Beginning of scientific explorations, Guinea Coast, Niger River, and Lake Tchad regions. Beginning of missionary work in West Africa, Sierra Leone (1796). French conquest of Egypt by Napoleon. Battle of Pyramids. Expulsion of French by English. Cape Colony ceded to the English by the king of the Netherlands (1814). Commodore Decatur, of United States navy, brings Algerian pirates to terms (1815). Piracy ceases. European legislation against foreign slave trade. Beginning of missionary work in North Africa (1825).

1830 to 1885. Period of exploration and discovery in Central Africa. All foreigners, including Protestant missionaries, expelled from Abyssinia (1838). Beginning of missionary work in East Africa (1844). Discoveries of Kilma-Njaro and Kenia by Krapf and Rebmann. Reports of great inland sea, followed by discoveries of lakes Tanganyika and Victoria Nyanza, and of the Nile flowing out of the latter, by Burton, Speke, and Grant. First railroad begun in

Africa from Cape Town. Construction of the Suez Canal. Discovery of diamonds in Cape Colony (1867). Livingstone's explorations and discoveries (1841-1873). Stanley's expedition to find Livingstone (1871). Livingstone's death (1873). Stanley's trans-continental expedition and descent of Congo (1875-77). Founding of South African Republic (1880), Paul Krüger, President. British occupation of Egypt (1882). Conquest of the Sudan. General Gordon's government. Revolt of the Mahdi. Fall of Khartum and death of Gordon (1885). Discovery of gold in Transvaal (1885).

1884 to 1897. Period of partition of Africa among European Powers. Italy makes war against Abyssinia and is defeated.

1898. Re-establishment of British control in Egyptian Sudan by Kitchener.

1899 to 1902. Boer War. Establishment of British control throughout South Africa.

## APPENDIX B

---

### BIBLIOGRAPHY

NOTE: Most of the following named books can be found in the public and private libraries of any community and should be drawn upon as much as possible for reference work. The special missionary libraries, such as the Missionary Campaign Libraries and the Conquest Missionary Library, contain some of the books herein mentioned. There is also available for classes a special reference library on Africa, which is for sale by the publisher whose name appears in the imprint on this text book or by your denominational missionary board.

#### GENERAL.

- BEACH, HARLAN P. Geography and Atlas of Protestant Missions. (2 Vols.) Student Volunteer Movement, New York.
- BEAZLEY, C. R. Prince Henry the Navigator. (Heroes of the Nations Series.) G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York.
- BROWN, R. Africa and Its Explorers. (4 Vols.) Cassell Co., Ltd., London.
- CRAFTS, W. F., and others. Protection of Native Races against Intoxicants and Opium. Revell, New York.
- DENNIS, J. S. Christian Missions and Social Progress. (2 Vols.) Revell, New York.
- HEAWOOD, E. Elementary Geography of Africa. Macmillan, London.

- JOHNSTON, H. H. Colonization of Africa. The Macmillan Co., New York.
- KEANE, A. H. Stanford's Compendium of Geography. (North and South Africa, 2 Vols.) Stanford, London.
- MERRIAM, E. E. History of American Baptist Missions. American Baptist Publication Society, Philadelphia.
- NOBLE, F. P. Redemption of Africa. (2 Vols.) Revell, New York.
- PARSONS, ELLEN C. Christus Liberator. The Macmillan Co., New York.
- RATZEL, F. History of Mankind, Book IV. The Macmillan Co., New York.
- REID, J. M., and GRACEY, J. T. Missions and the Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Eaton & Mains, New York.
- STEWART, J. Dawn in the Dark Continent. Revell, New York.
- TAYLOR, S. E. Price of Africa. Young People's Missionary Movement, New York.
- THOMPSON, A. C. History of Moravian Missions. Scribners, New York.
- WARNECK, G. Outline of the History of Protestant Missions. (Seventh Edition.) Revell, New York.
- Ecumenical Missionary Conference Report. (2 Vols.) American Tract Society, New York.
- CENTRAL AFRICA.
- ARNOT, F. S. Garenganze. Revell, New York.
- COILLARD, F. On the Threshold of Central Africa. American Tract Society, New York.
- DRUMMOND, H. Tropical Africa. Scribners, New York.
- JOHNSON, H. H. British Central Africa. Methuen & Co., London.

- STANLEY, H. M. *How I Found Livingstone*. Scribners, New York.
- STANLEY, H. M. *In Darkest Africa*. (2 Vols.) Scribners, New York.
- STANLEY, H. M. *My Dark Companions and Their Strange Stories*. Scribners, New York.
- STANLEY, H. M. *Through the Dark Continent*. (2 Vols.)
- SCHWEINFURTH, G., and others. *Emin Pasha in Central Africa*. Dodd, Mead & Co., New York.
- VERNER, S. P. *Pioneering in Central Africa*. Presbyterian Committee of Publication, Richmond, Va.

## EAST AFRICA.

- ASHE, R. P. *Chronicles of Uganda*. Hodder & Stoughton, London.
- BATTERSBY, W. H. *Pilkington of Uganda*. Revell, New York.
- DAWSON, E. C. *James Hannington, First Bishop of Equatorial Africa*. Seeley & Co., London.
- ELMSLIE, W. A. *Among the Wild Ngoni*. Revell, New York.
- [HARRISON, MRS. J. W.] *Mackay of Uganda*. Armstrong, New York.
- JACK, J. W. *Daybreak in Livingstonia*. Revell Co., New York.
- MULLINS, J. D. *Wonderful Story of Uganda*. Church Missionary Society, London.
- MATTHEWS, T. T. *Thirty Years in Madagascar*. Armstrong, New York.
- VIVIAN, H. *Abyssinia*. Pearson, London.

## NORTH AFRICA.

- ATTEBURY, A. P. *Islam in Africa*. G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York.

- RUTHERFORD, J., and GLENNY, E. H. *The Gospel in North Africa.* Percy Lund, Humphries & Co., London.
- SMITH, G. B. *General Gordon.* S. W. Partridge & Co., London.
- BOSSIER, G. *Roman Africa.* G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York.
- WATSON, A. P. *The American Mission in Egypt.* United Presbyterian Board of Publication, Pittsburgh.
- ZWEMER, S. M. *Raymond Lull: First Missionary to the Moslems.* Funk & Wagnalls Co., New York.

## SOUTH AFRICA.

- BLAIKIE, W. G. *Personal Life of David Livingstone.* Revell, New York.
- BRUCE, MRS. W. K. *Story of an African Chief.* Kegan, Paul, Trench, Trübner and Co., London.
- BRYCE, J. *Impressions of South Africa.* Century Co., New York.
- CARNEGIE, D. *Among the Matabeles.* Religious Tract Society, London.
- DEANE, D. J. *Robert Moffat.* Revell, New York.
- HEPBURN, A. D. *Twenty Years in Khama's Country.* Hodder & Stoughton, London.
- LIVINGSTONE, D. *Travels and Researches in South Africa.* Harper & Bros., New York.
- LIVINGSTONE, D. *The Zambesi and Its Tributaries.* Harper & Bros., New York.
- LIVINGSTONE, D. *Last Journals.* Harper & Bros., New York.
- MACKENZIE, W. D. *John Mackenzie, South African Missionary and Statesman.* Armstrong, New York.
- MOFFAT, J. S. *Robert and Mary Moffat.* Revell, New York.

- TYLER, J. Forty Years among the Zulus. Cong. S. S. and Publishing Society, Boston.
- WORSFOLD, W. R. The Story of South Africa. Horace Marshall & Son, London.

## WEST AFRICA.

- BELL, JOHN. A Miracle of Modern Missions. Revell, New York.
- BENTLEY, W. H. Pioneering on the Congo. (2 Vols.) Revell, New York.
- CHATELAIN, H. Folk-tales of Angola. Houghton, Mifflin Co., Boston.
- DIMMITT, D. Story of Madeira. Eaton & Mains, New York.
- [LAPSLEY, J. W.] Life and Letters of Samuel Norvell. Whittet & Shepperson, Richmond, Va.
- MCALLISTER, AGNES. A Lone Woman in Africa. Eaton & Mains, New York.
- MILUM, J. Thomas Burch Freeman. Revell Co., New York.
- NASSAU, R. H. Fetichism in West Africa. Scribners, New York.
- PAGE, J. Samuel Crowther. Revell, New York.
- PARSONS, ELLEN C. A Life for Africa. Revell, New York.
- ROBINSON, C. H. Hausa-Land. Sampson, Lowe, Marston & Co., London.
- STONE, R. H. In Africa's Forest and Jungle. Revell, New York.
- VERNER, S. P. Pioneering in Central Africa. Presbyterian Committee of Publication, Richmond, Va.
- WILSON, J. L. Western Africa. Harpers, New York.





Home and For, Miss'y Soc., African M. E. Ch., Home, Frit, and For, Miss. Soc., Unit. Br. in Christ Internat'l Med. Miss'y and Benevol. Assoc. Missionary Soc. of the Methodist Epis. Church. Miss. Soc., Wesleyan Meth. Connec. of N. Am. Miss. Board of Seventh-day Adventists. Peniel Missionary Society. Scandinavian Alliance Mission of N. Am. West Africa Gospel Mission Band. Woman's Miss. Assoc., United Breth. in Christ. Totals, 26 American Societies.	1878	32	94	4	1	124	134	10,573	773	7	500	.....
1885	1	3	1	1	6	16	9	366	.....	9	396	.....
1896	.....	8	.....	6	.....	.....	6	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
1893	20	9	16	8	169	.....	.....	4,164	5,096	43	1,383	10 448 2 1
1890	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	25	.....	1	24	.....
1895	9	5	12	6	9	14	130	.....	.....	4	216	.....
1895	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1	35	.....
1892	a4	.....	3	2	4	4	4	.....	.....	2	12	.....
1894	.....	7	3	4	1	1	10	.....	.....	6	260	.....
1877	181	164	135	103	2,179	815	39,339	59,892	.....	489	24,758	73 6,889 34 25 21,335
<i>British Societies</i>												
African Institute, Colwyn Bay, North Wales.	1893	.....	.....	.....	172	1	2,640	.....	.....	29	1	80
Anti-Slavery Com. of Society of Friends.	1896	.....	3	1	3	1	2	.....	.....	2	50	.....
Baptist Missionary Society.	1879	a32	16	2	35	34	400	.....	.....	.....	1,672	.....
British and Foreign Bible Society.	1886	4	3	.....	15	6	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Central Morocco Mission.	1886	a2	2	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Christian Missions ("Brethren").	1881	24	18	10	.....	15	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Church Missionary Society.	1804	62	57	58	63	138	20,517	38,411	.....	245	17,865	9 495 9 16 103,372
Church of Scotland Jewish Miss. Com.	.....	4	.....	3	3	1	.....	.....	.....	4	903	.....
Church of Scotland Foreign Miss. Com.	1874	4	10	8	.....	72	15	544	17	29	1,700	.....
Church of Scotland Women's Association.	1884	.....	.....	4	.....	16	.....	.....	.....	1	20	.....
Egypt Mission Band.	1898	a7	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Jerusalem and the East Miss. Fund.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
London Missionary Society.	1730	19	7	21	2	39	17	2,667	13,480	103	4,832	.....
London Soc. for Promoting Chr'y Among the Jews	1853	1	14	2	1	20	5	.....	.....	2	.....	.....
Maritzburg Miss. Assoc. for Diocese of Natal.	1856	9	.....	6	11	15	1,840	4,500	.....	2	.....	.....
Mildmay Mission to the Jews d.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Missions to Seamen.	1899	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Natal Missionary Society.	1895	1	.....	1	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
North African Mission.	1881	.....	23	33	22	4	50	200	.....	3	130	.....
Primitive Methodist Missionary Society.	1870	15	14	10	.....	17	54	.....	.....	8	265	.....
Quia Iboe Mission.	1887	.....	5	3	1	10	609	2,600	.....	5	.....	.....
Regious Beyond Missionary Union.	1889	.....	22	6	6	6	.....	380	.....	5	240	.....
Representative Church Council, Epis. Ch., Scot.	1884	30	8	.....	13	328	218	7,632	.....	6	900	.....
Society for the Propagation of the Gospel.	1752	45	3	.....	3	13	41	5,075	13,329	137	5	.....
Society of St. John the Evangelist d.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2	.....	.....
South Africa General Mission.	1890	6	5	9	9	16	13	142	.....	9	.....	.....
Southern Morocco Mission.	1888	.....	8	6	4	5	.....	.....	.....	1	60	.....

\* Chiefly from annual reports. † From tables in *The Geography and Atlas of Protestant Missions*, Harlan P. Beach, M.A., F.R.G.S.  
a Report does not distinguish between ordained and unordained men. b Report does not distinguish between missionaries' wives and women missionaries. c Report does not classify schools and scholars. d No data.

# APPENDIX C—(Continued) STATISTICS OF PROTESTANT MISSIONS IN AFRICA American Societies, 1904\*; Other Societies, 1900†

Work began in Africa	Missionary Force, Foreign and Native						Stations and Membership		Mem-bership	Education				Medical Work			
	Foreign	Ordained men	Unordained men	Missionaries' wives	Missionary women	Native workers	Stations and out-stations	Communicants		Adherents	Day-schools	Scholars	Higher Institutions	Students in same	Foreign men and women physicians	Hospitals, dispensaries	Patients during year reported
<i>British Societies—(Continued)</i>																	
U. F. C. of Scotland Foreign Missions.....	1821	45	49	47	39	888	456	16,044	8,182	396	26,309	9	280	15	12	8,728	
United Meth. Free Churches, H. and F. Mission.....	1859	11	11	8	.....	185	25	3,232	1,459	18	1,035	.....	.....	.....	3	342	
Universities' Mission to Central Africa.....	1861	32	21	1	45	165	87	3,416	10,990	97	4,137	2	40	3	11	.....	
Unsectarian Mission to Zulu Kafir.....	1879	1	.....	1	.....	4	3	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	
Wesleyan Methodist Missionary Society.....	1796	114	119	.....	.....	3,549	1,462	31,633	115,005	250	27,430	3	.....	.....	.....	.....	
Women's Aux. Wesleyan Meth. For. Miss. Soc.....	1861	.....	.....	3	3	.....	3	.....	.....	.....	245	3	140	.....	.....	.....	
Young Men's Foreign Missionary Society.....	1877	1	6	5	3	14	12	110	200	6	200	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	
Young Men's Foreign Missionary Society.....	1892	.....	18	7	2	60	26	.....	450	34	2,400	.....	.....	.....	2	.....	
Zambesi Industrial Mission.....	1896	17	4	8	6	86	51	.....	.....	36	.....	.....	36	1	.....	.....	
Zulu and Missy Diocese, Prov. of S. Africa.....	.....	489	402	264	275	8,294	2,728	98,068	209,203	1,445	90,374	37	1,093	40	83	179,527	
Totals, 36 British Societies.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	
<i>Continental Societies</i>																	
Church of Norway Miss., estab. by Shreuder.....	1843	5	.....	4	4	8	3	323	665	3	180	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	
Church of Sweden Mission.....	1876	9	.....	6	10	28	39	631	429	19	281	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	
Com. for the Mayor Mission at Moknea.....	1883	.....	1	1	.....	.....	1	.....	15	1	15	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	
Deaconesses' Institution at Kaiserswerth.....	1857	.....	.....	.....	21	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2	.....	
East African Free Mission.....	1889	.....	1	.....	2	.....	3	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	
Ev. Luth. Miss. Inst., Hermannsburg, Hanover.....	1854	45	.....	45	.....	3,461	149	25,400	.....	96	6,068	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	

Ev. Lutheran Mission at Leipzig.....	1892	15	4	7	.....	17	31	37	13	468	.....	514	2	2	.....
Evangelical Missionary Society, Basel.....	1828	59	20	40	4	420	9,852	58,416	302	8,436	9	514	2	2	.....
Ev. Missionary Society for German E. Africa.....	1887	19	8	15	20	25	288	553	17	581	2	18	1	1	.....
Evangelical National Society.....	1865	12	5	10	5	28	206	502	14	305	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Finnish Missionary Society.....	1871	5	1	5	3	21	297	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
French Protestant Mission in Kabylie.....	1886	2	.....	2	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1	5,000
French Society for the Evangelization of Israel.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
French Swiss Mission.....	1875	18	4	16	15	50	958	2,170	45	1,584	1	20	2	2	.....
Hanover Ev. Luth. Free Church Mission.....	1892	410	5	5	.....	13	3,715	.....	17	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Hollins Union.....	1891	10	.....	.....	.....	9	.....	.....	3	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Mission Inst. at Neukirchen, near Moers.....	1887	9	.....	6	.....	2	81	560	.....	168	1	4	.....	.....	.....
North German Missionary Society.....	1847	16	1	10	6	.....	2,257	2,786	45	1,296	1	11	.....	.....	.....
Norwegian Missionary Society.....	1849	12	.....	12	3	41	1,016	2,060	32	714	1	182	.....	.....	.....
Rhenish Missionary Society.....	1829	44	3	36	1	215	10,173	.....	60	4,347	2	.....	.....	.....	.....
Société des Missions évang. de Paris.....	1853	36	8	25	6	342	12,374	17,346	162	9,725	3	185	1	2	.....
Soc. for the Extension of the Gospel in Egypt.....	1870	1	.....	7	.....	.....	42	100	2	150	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Soc. for the Prom. of Ev. Miss. Am'g the Heathen.....	1884	81	13	75	15	150	222	15,845	.....	6,097	2	30	1	.....	.....
Sudan-Pionier-Mission in Eisenach.....	.....	1	.....	1	.....	3	.....	.....	2	150	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Swedish Missionary Society.....	1882	20	1	8	11	62	70	1,573	101	3,606	1	36	.....	7	20,000
Woman's Foreign Missionary Work.....	1898	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Totals, 26 Continental Societies.....	.....	430	70	330	110	1,815	1,288	85,062	942	44,721	25	1,000	7	19	25,000
<i>International Societies</i>															
Missionary Society of the German Baptists.....	1891	5	.....	2	2	50	54	2,142	650	1,240	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Moravian Missions.....	1792	47	10	50	.....	459	42	4,762	12,593	4,030	2	19	.....	.....	.....
Native Baptist Church (Lagos).....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	61	6	245	580	274	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Pongas Miss., or W. Indian African Mission.....	1855	4	5	4	2	.....	10	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Salvation Army <i>d</i> .....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
South African Baptist Missionary Society.....	.....	3	1	2	5	9	11	142	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
South African Baptist Missionary Society, Wesleyan.....	.....	11	.....	.....	3,531	1,778	51,251	209,627	581	37,351	10	.....	.....	.....	.....
Totals, 7 International Societies.....	.....	70	16	58	9	4,110	1,901	58,542	637	42,895	12	19	.....	.....	.....
<i>Nationality Unknown</i>															
Alziers Spanish Mission.....	.....	2	2	.....	1	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Miss Trotter's Mission.....	1888	.....	.....	.....	5	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Totals, 2 Societies, Nationality Unknown.....	.....	2	2	.....	6	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
GRAND TOTAL, 37 Societies.....	.....	1,172	654	787	503	16,398	6,734	281,011	613,248	3,573	202,748	147	8,501	81	225,862

\* Chiefly from annual reports.

† From tables in *The Geography and Atlas of Protestant Missions*, Harlan P. Beach, M.A., F.R.G.S.*a* Report does not distinguish between ordained and unordained men.*b* Report does not distinguish between missionaries' wives

and women missionaries.

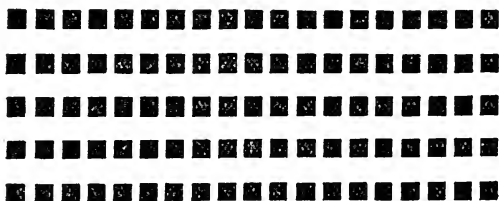
*c* Report does not classify schools and scholars.*d* No data.

# RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS OF AFRICA



*EACH CRESCENT REPRESENTS ONE MILLION MOHAMMEDANS*

<i>EACH CROSS</i>	+	+	+	<i>THE WHITE CROSS</i>
<i>REPRESENTS ONE MILLION</i>	+	+	+	<i>REPRESENTS LESS THAN ONE</i>
<i>NOMINAL CHRISTIANS</i>	+	+	+	<i>MILLION CHRISTIAN COMMUNICANTS</i>
	+	+	+	



*EACH SQUARE REPRESENTS ONE MILLION PAGANS*

The above is one of a series of six wall charts which have recently been prepared and lithographed in colors, under the auspices of the Young People's Missionary Movement. The charts are 36x44 inches in size, and are printed on heavy paper. They are available to churches, Sunday schools, and other organizations, in unbroken sets of six, carefully packed in strong tubes for shipment.

Information as to styles and prices may be secured by addressing the Young People's Missionary Movement, 156 Fifth Avenue, New York, or your Denominational Missionary Board.

**P**ORTIONS OF THE BIBLE HAVE BEEN TRANSLATED INTO ABOUT 120 AFRICAN DIALECTS. THE FOLLOWING IS JOHN 3:16 IN SIX OF THEM:

---

**SWAHILI** (*E. Coast of Africa*)

Kwani ndivyo Muungu alivyopenda ulimwengu, akatoa na Mwana wake wa pekee, illi wote wamaminio waupate uzima wa milele wala wasipotee.

**ZULU** (*South Africa*)

Ngokuba uTixo wa li tanda kangaka izwe, wa li nika inDodana yake ezelweyo yodwa, ukuba bonke aba kolwa kuyo ba nga bubi, kodwa ba be nobomi obungapeliyo.

**KAFIR** (*South Africa*)

Ngokuba Utixo walitanda ilizwe kangaka, wada wanika unyana wake okupela kwozelweyo, ukuze osukuba ekolwa kuye angabubi, koko abe nobomi obungunapakade.

**HAUSSA** (*West Africa*)

*Don Alla ya so dunia hakkanan ši ya bada Dansa nafari, en kowa ya yirda daši, ba ši gbata ba, anma ši yi rai hal abbada.*

**MPONGWE** (*West Africa*)

Kânde Anyambiē arāndi ntye yinlā nli ntāndinli mē avenliē Onwanli yē wikika, inlē om' edu o beke-liē avere, ndo e be doanla nl'ēmēnlā zakānlakā.

**DIKELE** (*West Africa*)

Nadiambilindī Anyambiē a midinh pēnzhe nyi na thadinh thatī thō tha yē mivē Miana ngwēi ngwadikika, na mutyi jēshē ngwa yē bundliē a tyi magwa, nji a bē' na thaki' th' adukwa jeshē.









# INDEX

- Abai River, 30
- Abyssinia, 41, 47, 132, 172, 173, 182, 197, 213; visit of Portuguese, 6; mountains, 13; independence, 24
- Abyssinian Church, 47, 173, 176, 178, (map) 193
- Adamawa, 275
- Adornment, 64, 65
- Africa: before the Christian era, 1-3; size, 10-12; physical features, 12-19; climate and temperature, 18, 19; products, 19-23; minerals, 21-23; partition, 23, 24, 121, 122; European and American enterprise, 24-27; commerce, 27; exports and imports, 27; intoxicating liquors, 27; population, 28, 39, see also "Population"; cost in lives, 28-32; languages and dialects, 47; religious census, 45-47; diseases and preventives, 119, 146; Portuguese, Spanish, French, 133; free colonies, 188; in Bible story, 167; proportion to each mission worker, 275; latent forces, 279. See also divisions, as "East Africa."
- African, the typical Pagan, 49-70; character, 69, 70; very religious, 99; educational capacity, 156-158; uplift, 107
- "African Association," 8
- Africaner, Chief, 185, 251-253, (map) 184
- American Baptist Missionary Union, 189
- American Board, 150, 181
- "American Mission" (United Presbyterian), 144, 193-197, 278
- American Missions, 28, 29, 144; Kassai Mission, 114; American Board, 150, 181; pioneer Liberia work, 189; Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 189, 235, 236; Baptist Missionary Union, 189, 271; "American Mission" (United Presbyterian), 192-197; Mission of Presbyterian Church, 237; Presbyterian Church, South, 238
- Angola, 118, 133, 190, 191
- "Apostle Street," 215
- Arab traders, 123, 223
- Arabic language, 47
- Arabs in North Africa, 40
- Ashanti country, 91, 94; king, 56; people, 126
- Asser, native evangelist, 186
- Assiut Training College, 194
- Atbara River, 26
- Atlas Range, 13
- Baby, the African, 51, 52
- Baganda, people of Uganda, 265, 272, 279
- Bagirmi, 275
- Bakete people, 279
- Bakuba people, 280
- Baluba people, 272, 280
- Algeria, 19, 192
- Bantu Africa, 43, 44; languages, 44, 47; people, 186, (map) 224
- Banyai, 186, (map) 184
- Baptism of converts, 211, 267

- Baptist Missionary Society (British), 181  
 Barotsiland, 187, 228; people, 186, (map) 184  
 Bashilange, 280, (map) 189  
 Basutoland, 148; work, 186, (map) 184  
 Batlokwa people, 115  
 Beaconsfield, 222  
 Beads, 48  
 Bechuanaland, 148, 220, 221, 230, 231, 257-261  
 Bechuanas, 44, 185, 217-221, 261, (map) 184  
 Beirut College, 278  
 Belgium, 121, 141, 238  
 Bennett, J. Gordon, 226  
 Bentley, W. Holman, 67, 241  
 Benue River, 42  
 Betrothal of little girls, 54  
 Bible, 124, 127, 197; translation, 118, 172, 220, 221, 263; circulation, 266, 270; readers, 156  
 Blaikie, William G., 222  
 Blantyre district, 124; Mission, 199, (map) 198  
 Blue Nile, 30  
 Blythwood Mission, 186, (map) 184  
 Boers, 183, 229, 231, 232  
 Bornu, 275, (map) 275  
 Bovuma Island, 147  
 Boyhood, 53  
 Brick-making, 48; brick-mould, 160  
 British Central Africa, 124, 160, 161; government, 130, 155  
 British Missions: Livingstonia Mission, 114, 130, 155, 199, 269; Baptist Missionary Society, 181; Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, London, Scottish and Wesleyan Societies, 182; Lovedale Industrial Mission, 185; Blythwood Mission, 186; Nonconformist societies, 189; Church Missionary Society, 189, 192, 213, 267; North Africa Mission, 192; London Missionary Society, 199, 229; Blantyre Mission, 199; Universities' Mission, 199, 243, (map) 198  
 British Nigeria, 142-144, 147  
 Bruce, James, in Abyssinia, 7, 8  
 Brussels Conference, 143  
 Burial, 67; burial alive, 92, 108, 111; hut burial, 67  
 "Bush Schools," 54, 55  
 Bushmen, 44, 45, 79, 184, (map) 184  
 Buxton, Sir T. Fowell, 232  
 Calabar, 190; Old Calabar, 148, 190, 241, (map) 189  
 Cannibalism, 51, 93, 94, 108, 111, 143, 265, 271, 272, (map) 224  
 Cape Colony 19, 159, 182, 231  
 Cape of Good Hope, named, 5  
 Cape to Cairo railway, 25, 231, (map) 25  
 Cape Town, 210, 211, 251  
 Carey, William, 181  
 Carpenters, 155, 160  
 Central Africa, 40, 44, 185, 197, 273  
 Chamberlain, Joseph, 231, 232  
 Character, transformed, 148  
 Charms, 80-82, 179  
 Chiefs, native, 185  
 Child life, 52-54  
 Children, 57, 58  
 China, 12, 107, 158  
 Chinese in Africa, 39, 131  
 Chitambo, 228, (map) 224  
 Christ among Mohammedan prophets, 110

- Christian Africa, 46, 47;  
numbers, 46, 274
- Christian conscience, 142,  
188
- Christian Missions, 4, 28-32,  
70, 110, 112, 114, 123, 144-  
150; British policy, 124;  
fourfold method, 151-161;  
early church, 170-175; me-  
diæval church, 179, 180,  
207-210; modern church,  
180-200; enlisted universi-  
ties, 208; work remaining  
to be done, 274-283
- Christian population, 41, 46,  
47
- Christianity: Africa's need  
of, 71; transformation by,  
107; compromised by liquor  
traffic, 127; leavening  
force, 141, 145, 148; need of  
evangelistic power, 156;  
early growth, 169-175; able  
to win the Dark Continent,  
282
- Christians, early, 169-178;  
native, gifts of, 186
- Chuma, 69
- Church bells, 124
- Church of England, 182, 267
- Church Missionary Society,  
189, 234, (maps) 193, 198
- Civilization, evil phases of,  
70, 71, 120; checked, 141,  
142
- Climate, 18, 19, 119, 146
- Coal, 22
- Coast lands, 12, 120, 143
- Cocoanut palm culture, 160
- Coillard, François, 186, 228
- Colenso, Bishop, 158, 159
- Colleges, 158
- Comber, Thomas J., 239-241,  
(map) 189
- Commerce, 27, 120, 141, 144,  
145, 223
- Congo basin, 18, 21, 24, 44,  
121, 147, 148, 191, 243, 270-  
273; language, 47; Mission,  
241; River, 5, 7, 9, 13-15,  
26, 134, 179, 191, 214, 257;  
State, 24; oppression, 121,  
122; tribes, 191
- Continental Missions: Paris  
Society, 115; Rhenish Mis-  
sionary Society, 132; Mora-  
vian Missions, 182, 210;  
Lutheran Missionaries, 182;  
Swedish Missionary So-  
ciety, 197
- Converts, native, 256, 257,  
273
- Converts of Islam, Moham-  
medan costume, 48
- Cooks, 160
- Coptic Church, 47, 173, 177,  
178, (map) 193
- Coptic population of Egypt,  
41
- Copts, 193-195
- Costume, the Mohammedan,  
48
- Cotton cloth, 48
- Cowries, 48
- Cox, Melville B., 236-238, 242,  
(map) 189
- Cross, Dr. D. K., 146
- Crowther, Bishop Samuel A.,  
127, 128, 253, (map) 189
- Cruikshank, 94
- Crusaders, the, 188, 207, 208
- Currency, 48, 145, 146
- Da Gama, Vasco, 5
- Darfur, 275
- "Dark Continent," meaning  
of, 1
- Dead, messages to, 92, 93
- "Deadland," 77, 91
- Death rate, 51
- Deaths of natives, 66; by  
violence, 95
- Diamonds, 21, 22; mines, 39;  
value of product, 27

- Diaz, Bartholomew, 5  
 Diseases, African, 146  
 Drakenberg Mts., 13  
 Dreams, native view of, 78  
 Dress, native, 64  
 Drummond, Henry, 200, 228, 254, 255  
 Drunkenness, 108  
 Dutch in South Africa, 6, 7, 183, 210-212, 251  
  
 East Africa, 13, 39, 45, 47, 120, 123, 133, 145, 197; Missions, 197-200  
 East Central Africa, 13, 198  
 Education, native, 49, 50, 158  
 Educational Missions, 156-159  
 Egypt, 1-24, 41, 168-173  
 Egyptian Christians, 176; Missions, 192-197  
 Eleazer, native evangelist, 187  
 Elmslie, W. A., 98, 124, 269  
 England, 6, 7, 129, 220, 221, 228-233, 253, 258  
 Ethiopia, 3, 168-173  
 "Ethiopian Movement," 131  
 Europe, 117, 121, 126, 208  
 Evangelistic Missions, 152-154  
 Evangelists, native, 156, 266  
 Exploration and explorers, 4-10, 28-32, 179, 214, 223-228  
  
 Family, in Africa, 57-61  
 Farming, 49, 66  
 Fashoda, 196  
 Felashas, 47  
 Fetish, 180; doctor, 81  
 Fetichism, 77-101  
 Fever, African, 146  
 Food, 63, 64, 192, 215  
 Forests, 18  
 Frazer, Melville, 191.  
 Free Town, Sierra Leone, 253  
 Freedom of slaves, 144-146  
  
 French in Africa, 6, 24; Madagascar, 133, 264  
 Frere, Sir Bartle, 230  
 Fulahs, 42, 43, 253, (map) 275  
 Funerals, 66, 67  
 Future life, 100, 101  
  
 Gabun, 190, 237, 241, (map) 189  
 Gallaland, 197  
 Gambia River, 16  
 Gando, 275, (map) 295  
 Garenganze country, 191  
 Geddy, King, 281, (map) 189  
 German East Africa, 145; Kamerun, 157; Southwest Africa, 122, 132  
 Girlhood, 52, 53, 54  
 Gladstone, 222  
 God, power of true idea, 90  
 Gods, 87-90; Pagan conception of, 83-87, 100  
 Gold Coast, 6, 22, 190, (map) 21  
 Gold, production of, 27, 39  
 Goldie, Sir George, 142  
 Good, Adolphus C., 236-238, (map) 189  
 Gordon College, 124  
 Grain Coast, 6, (map) 21  
 Great Britain, 141; expansion, 185; policy, 124, 125, 196, 229-231  
 Grenfell, 30, 241  
 Guinea Coasts, 4-21, 40, 41  
  
 Hannington, Bishop, 243  
 Hartzell, Bishop J. C., 38, 118, 281  
 Hausas, 42, 43, 47, 191, 279  
 "Head-money," 57  
 Heathenism defined, 107  
 Hepburn, J. D., 259  
 "Hinterland," 24  
 Holzapfel, Mr. 132  
 Hottentots, 44, 182-185, 211, (map) 184

- Human sacrifice, 143, 265  
Huts, native, 60, 62; hut burial, 67, 68  
India, 107; natives in Africa, 39, 131  
Industrial Missions, 154, 155, 158  
Industries, 48, 49, 141, 185  
Immoral life, native, 100, 108-112; foreign, 120, 125  
Infant mortality, 51  
Infanticide, 51, 52  
Inhambane district, 133  
Ilala, 228  
Islam. See "Mohammedanism"  
Ivory, 23; Coast, 6, 190, (map) 21  
Jack, J. W., 269  
Jackson, J. J., 149  
Jesuits, 30, 132, 182, 213  
Jews, 47, 171, 197  
Johnston, Sir H. H., 161  
Jones, David, 262, (map) 184  
Journeys of Livingstone, 223, (map) 224  
Kaffirs, 131, 184  
Kalahari Desert, 17, 44  
Kalley, Dr. R. R., 187  
Kamerun, 146, 157, 190; Mountains, 13; Mohammedans in, 45  
Kanem, 275  
Kassai River, 238; Valley, 272, 279; Mission, 114, 191  
Kathokan, 116  
Kenia Mt., 13  
Khama, King, 185, 257-261, (map) 184  
Khartum, 25, 124, 196  
Kilima-Njaro Mt., 13, 214  
Kolobeng, 226  
Koran, 111, 124  
Kordofan, 275  
Krapf, John, and Rosina, 30, 132, 192, 198, 199, 213, 217, (map) 198  
Kuruman, 219  
Labor in Africa, 39, 130, 131  
Lagos, 190  
Lakes, 13, 14  
Languages, 47, 118, 119, 150  
Lapsley, Samuel N., 238, 239, 272, (map) 189  
Laws, Dr., 269  
Leopold, King, 121, 250  
Liberia, 24, 188-190, 281  
Life of natives precarious, 51  
Limpopo River, 17  
Lindley, 241  
Linyanti, 9, 223  
Liquor traffic, 125-129; 142, 143, 190, 259-261  
Literature, Christian, 118, 150, 156, 195  
Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, 146  
Livingstone, David, 8, 9, 29, 32, 142, 185, 199, 200, 222-228, (maps) 184, 224  
Livingstone, Mrs., 222, 225  
Livingstonia Mission, 114, 124, 130, 199, 269; Industrial, 130, 155  
London Missionary Society, 182, 229, 233  
Lord's Supper, 220, 254  
Lovedale Industrial Mission, 155, 185, (map) 184  
Luebo, 238, 272, 280, (maps) 189, 224  
Lugard, Captain, 111  
Lull, Raymond, 208-210, 244, (map) 193  
Lunda plateau, 279  
Lutheran missions and missionaries, 132, 182  
MacDonald, Dr. Duff, 93  
Mackay, Alexander, 132, 156, 198, 233-235, 265  
Mackenzie, Bishop, 243

- Mackenzie, John, 30, 31, 185, 229-233, 258  
 Madagascar, 125, 145; French oppression, 133, 134  
 Madeira Islands, 133, 187  
 Makololo country, 223; people, 185, (map) 184  
 Malagasy, 262  
 MaNhallala, 116  
 Man's domain in Africa, 60-62  
 Maps, early, 2; modern, 10  
 Marriage, 54-56, 149  
 Martyrs, 171, 175, 210, 234, 263, 267  
 Massaquoi, Prince, 129  
 McAllister, Agnes, 126  
 McKinley, President, 250  
 Medical Missions, 151, 152  
 Mediterranean Coast, 39, 47, 171  
 Menelik, King, 6  
 Mills, Samuel J., 181  
 Minerals, 21, 22  
 Mines, 59; mission work at, 153  
 Missionaries, number giving life, 29; explorers, 4, 30, 31; qualifications, 243, 244  
 Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 189  
 Missions: Protestant, 29, 32, 114, 115, 130, 132-134, 144; African beginnings, 181-183; obstacles, 183; South African field, 183-187, 210-213, 217-233, 251-253, 257-261; West African field, 187-192, 235-241, 255-257, Madeira Islands, 187; Pygmies, 191, 192; North African and Egyptian field, 192-197; East African field, 197-200, 213-217, 254, 255, 265-270; other notable names, 241; woman's work, 242; present service, 243, 244; Madagascar, 261-264; Congo basin, 270-273; Roman Catholic, 30, 179-181; African native mission service, 185-187, 194, 195, 251-274  
 Mockler-Ferryman, Col. A. F., 147  
 Moffat, Robert, and Mary, 217-222, 251, 252, (map) 184  
 Mohammed, 4, 40, 110  
 Mohammedanism, entrance into Africa, 40; missions, 41; field, 42-45; members, 45, 46; origin, 110; prophets, 110; intemperance, 111; influence on its converts, 110, 111, 114; clothes, 111, 112; now native to Africa, 112; numbers, 112; aggressiveness, 113; Cairo "university," 113; British policy toward, 124, 125; how advanced, 127; factors in conversion of, 144, 193-196; its early opportunity, 176; a barrier, 178, 192-196, 234; efforts for, 207-210; aiming at continent, 277; must be evangelized, 278  
 Molique, King, 127, (map) 189  
 Mombasa, 26, 213  
 Mombasa-Uganda railway, 26, 45  
 Money, 48, 49  
 Moolu, 254, 225  
 Morley, John, 232  
 Morocco, 19, 24  
 Mosquitoes and malaria, 146, 147  
 Mountains, 12, 13, (relief map, following page 12)  
 Namaqualand, 251  
 Natal, 5, 149  
 Ndombe, King, 250

- Ndombe, town, 280, (map) 224
- Negro, 39, 40, 168; prominence in Sudan, 41; brain capacity, 156-158; early missionary influence, 189; stability, 176, (map) 275
- Ngoniland, 148; people, 155, 269
- Niger River, 9, 14, 15, 40, 42, 191, 253, 274
- Nigeria, British, 142, 144
- Nile River, 1-15, 26, 39, 64, 196, 214; Upper, 1, 41, 170; Valley, 167
- Noble, F. P., 159
- North Africa, 40, 47, 123, 169-176; Mission (British), 192; Missions, 192-197
- North America, 39, 276
- Nubia, 172
- Nupe country, 127, 128
- Nyasa Lake, 13-16, 269; country, 148
- Officials, foreign, 119-121, 125, 130, 146, 148, 159, 196
- Ogowe River, 191
- Old Calabar, 148, 190, 241
- O'Neill, Thomas, 243
- Ophir, 2, 22
- Orange culture, 160
- Orange River, 17
- Ostrich culture, 20
- Pagan Africa, 41, 43; population, 45, 109, 110; African, 49-70, 217
- Paganism defined, 107; African, 77-101; problem, 109, 110
- "Palaver," 50, 61
- Papal bull, 134
- Paris Missionary Society, 115
- Parker, Bishop, 243
- Partition of Africa, 23, 24
- Pastors, native, 124
- Paul the Apostle of Banza Manteke, 255, (map) 189
- "Pentecost on the Congo," 241, 271
- Persecution, 196
- Philippine Islands, 133
- Phœnicians, 2
- Plateaus, 12-14
- Polygamy, 56, 57, 108, 114-116, 149, 265
- Population, Africa, 39; native, 28, 39; white, 39; Negro or Sudan, 41; Pagan, 45, 109, 110; Christian, 46; Jews, 47; natives of India, 39; Chinese, 39
- Portugal, 4, 5, 141
- Portuguese, 6, 7, 122, 123, 187; missions, 30, 77, 179, 180
- "Possession," by a divinity, 100
- Powers, foreign, 23, 24, 48, 121-125, 129, 142, 143
- Prayers, 192, 219, 255, 257
- Preachers, native, 118, 156
- Presbyterian Church Mission, 237
- Priests and priestesses, native, 100
- Principe Island, 123
- Printers, native, 155, 160, 161
- Problems, African, 107-134; solution, 141-161
- Products of Africa, 19-23, (map) 21
- Prohibition of liquor traffic, 143, 259-261
- Property in Africa, 68, 145
- Protectorates, British, 142, 233
- Protestants, 46; French, 134
- Ptolemaic system taught, 113
- Pygmies, 44, 45, 191, 192
- Quanza River, 191
- Quilimane, 224

- Race problems, 130-132  
 Radama, King, 262  
 Railroads, 16, 25-27, 120,  
     (map) 25  
 Ranavalona, Queen, 262  
 Rebmann, 30, 199, 214  
 Red Sea, 17, 26, 197  
 Reincarnation, 100, 101  
 Religions, native, 99-101, 127  
 Rhenish Missionary Society,  
     132  
 Rhodes, Cecil, 231  
 Rhodesia, 52  
 Richards, Henry, 241, 271  
 Rickard, Mr., 239  
 Rivers, 13-17, (relief map,  
     following page 12)  
 Roads, 145  
 Robert College, 278  
 Robinson, Canon, 111  
 Roman Catholics in Africa,  
     46; missions, 180, 181  
 Roman Catholic opposition,  
     132, 133; persecution, 187,  
     264  
 Royal Geographical Society,  
     8, 224  
 Rubber, 122  
 Ruwenzori Mt., 13
- Sacrifices, 79, 80; human, 51,  
     79, 90-94, 108, 111, 143  
 Sahara Desert, 1, 17, 20, 41  
 Saint Francis of Assisi, 208  
 Saint Paul de Loanda, 9  
 Sanitary interests, 146  
 Sankuru-Kassai peninsula,  
     280  
 San Thomé Island, 123  
 Saracens, 207  
 Savannahs of Africa, 17, 18  
 Schmidt, George, 182, 210  
 Schools, mission, 122, 156,  
     158, 194, 211, 264, 273  
 Sebituane, Chief, 185, (map)  
     184  
 Self-support, 124, 185, 241
- Senegal River, 7, 16, 17  
 Shaftesbury, Lord, 232  
 Shire River, 15, 16  
 Shoshong, 230, (map) 184  
 Shupanga, 225, (map) 224  
 Sierra Leone, 182, 188-190  
 Sims, 241  
 Slatin Pasha, 111  
 Slave Coast, 6, 100, 190,  
     (map) 21  
 Slave trade, foreign, 32, 41,  
     42, 116, 123, 142, 187, 189,  
     190, 223  
 Slavery, 111, 179, 188, 188;  
     domestic, 51, 58, 108, 111,  
     114, 116-118, 122, 123, 144-  
     146, 265  
 Sleeping sickness, 147  
 Smart, Rev. and Mrs. W. G.,  
     187  
 "Smelling-out," 96-98  
 Smith, Lieut. Shergold, 243  
 Society for the Propagation  
     of the Gospel, 182  
 Sokotra Island, 172  
 Somaliland, 45  
 South Africa, 17, 19-22, 27,  
     39, 59, 115, 133, 145, 155,  
     182, 183, 274; Missions, 183-  
     187  
 South Central Africa, 9  
 Southeast Africa, 47  
 Southwest Africa, 44  
 Spheres of influence, 23, 24  
 Spirit-world of African, 50,  
     78, 82, 107  
 Stanley, Henry M., 1, 9, 10,  
     222, 226, 227, 233, 240, 265  
 Statistics of Africa: Size, 11;  
     commerce, 27; population,  
     39-47; importations of liq-  
     uor, 126; Roman Catholic  
     native communicants, 180;  
     Protestant communicants  
     in Central Africa, 273; work  
     in Egypt, 193-195; in Mada-  
     gascar, 264; in Uganda, 267,



- 268; total summaries, Statistical Tables, 300  
 Stead, W. T., 31  
 Steere, Bishop, 241  
 Stewart, James, 39, 186  
 Stock, Eugene, 216  
 Student Volunteer Band, 194  
 Sudan, 19, 20, 40, 41, 45, 47, 113, 123, 191, 274, 276, 279; Egyptian, 124, 196, (map) 275  
 Supan, Dr. A., 39  
 Susi, 69  
 Swahili language, 47  
 Swedish Missionary Society, 197  
 Tanganyika Lake, 13, 14, 185, 227  
 Tattooing, 64  
 Taylor, Bishop William, 241  
 Tchad Lake, 14, 40  
 Teachers, native, 194, 266  
 Telegraphers, 155, 160, 161  
 Temperature, 19  
 Tetanus, 51  
 Tom-tom, 66  
 Trade, 47-49, 146  
 Traders, foreign, 119, 125  
 Tribal life, 68  
 Tsetse fly, 147  
 Tunis, 209  
 Twin superstition, 52  
 Ubangi River, 30, (map) 189  
 Uganda, 26, 44, 45, 120, 145, 147, 148, 156, 198, 199, 216, 235, 243, 265-268, (map) 224  
 Ujiji, 226, (map) 224  
 United States, 109, 158, 275  
 Universities' Mission, 199  
 Upper Nile, 41  
 Veldts, 17  
 Verner, S. P., 114, 126, 191, 250, 272, 273, 279, 280  
 "Vianga-Vianga," 240  
 Vices, 108, 111, 190  
 Victoria Falls, 16  
 Victoria Nyanza Lake, 13, 14  
 Vulgate translation, 172  
 Wadai, 275  
 Waddell, 241  
 War, South African, 232  
 Wars, native, 143  
 Watson, Dr. Andrew, 195, 196  
 Wesleyan work, 182  
 West Africa, 133, 181, 179; Missions, 187-192  
 West Coast, 4, 6, 7, 9, 13, 26, 46, 223, 243, (map) 189  
 White, A. S., 126, 127  
 White man's responsibility, 28; peril from, 119, 120  
 White population of Africa, 39  
 Williams College, 181  
 Wilson, John Leighton, 241  
 Witboi, Henry, 132  
 Witch doctor, palaver, trials, 96-99  
 Witchcraft, 51, 95-99, 111, 143, 265  
 Wives in polygamy, 115; number, 56  
 Woman's domain, 65, 66; duties, 61, 62  
 Women converts, steadfastness, 115  
 Women, mission workers, 187, 213, 214, 217-221, 225, 242  
 World's Parliament of Religions, 129  
 "Yer," 192  
 Yoruba country, 190; people, 253, (map) 189  
 Zambezi, 9, 13, 15, 16, 191, 223, 225, 274  
 Zanzibar, 45  
 Zomba, 161  
 Zulus, 44, 47, 124, 131, 159, 185, 242, (map) 184

# The Forward Mission Study Courses

---

*"Anywhere, provided it be FORWARD."—David Livingstone.*

---

## *Prepared under the auspices of the* **YOUNG PEOPLE'S MISSIONARY MOVEMENT**

EDITORIAL COMMITTEE:—S. Earl Taylor, Harry Wade Hicks, John Willis Baer, John W. Wood, A. W. Halsey, Don O. Shelton.

The Forward Mission Study Courses are an outgrowth of a conference of leaders in Young People's Mission Work, held in New York City, December, 1901. To meet the need that was manifested at that conference, for Mission Study Text-Books suitable for Young People, two of the delegates, Professor Amos R. Wells, of the United Society of Christian Endeavor and Mr. S. Earl Taylor, Chairman of the General Missionary Committee of the Epworth League, projected the Forward Mission Study Courses. These courses have been officially adopted by the Young People's Missionary Movement and are now under the immediate direction of the Executive Committee of the Movement, which consists of the young people's secretaries or other official representatives of fifteen of the leading Missionary Boards of America.

The aim is to publish a series of text-books covering the various home and foreign mission fields and written by leading authorities with special reference to the needs of young people. The entire series when completed will comprise perhaps as many as twenty text-books. A general account will be given of some of the smaller countries, such as Japan, Korea and Turkey; but, for the larger fields, as China, Africa, and India, the general account will be supplemented by a series of biographies of the principal missionaries connected with the country. The various home mission fields will also be treated both biographically and historically.

The following text-books have been published:—

1. **The Price of Africa.** (Biographical.) By S. Earl Taylor.
2. **Into All the World.** A general survey of missions. By Amos R. Wells.

**3. Princely Men in the Heavenly Kingdom.** (Biographical.)

By Harlan P. Beach, M. A., F. R. G. S.

**4. Child Life in Mission Lands.** A course of study for Junior Societies. By Ralph E. Diffendorfer.

**5. Sunrise in the Sunrise Kingdom.** A Study of Japan. By Rev. John H. De Forest, D. D.

**6. Heroes of the Cross in America.** Home missions. (Biographical.) By Don O. Shelton.

**7. Daybreak in the Dark Continent.** A Study of Africa. By Wilson S. Naylor.

Among the writers that have been secured for other text-books of the series, are Bishop J. M. Thoburn, D.D., of India ; Harry Wade Hicks ; S. Earl Taylor ; Robert E. Speer ; William Carey, of India ; Rev. E. E. Strong, D.D. ; Rev. Edward Judson, D.D. ; and Rev. J. M. Buckley, D.D.

These books are published by mutual arrangement among the denominational publishing houses, to whom all orders should be addressed. They are bound uniformly, and are sold for 50 cents, in cloth, and 35 cents, in paper.

---

Study classes desiring more advanced text-books are referred to the admirable series published by the interdenominational committee of the Woman's Boards. The volumes already published are :—

**Via Christi.** A Study of Missions before Carey. By Louise Manning Hodgkins.

**Lux Christi.** A Study of Missions in India. By Caroline Atwater Mason.

**Rex Christus.** A Study of Missions in China. By Rev. Arthur H. Smith, D. D.

**Dux Christus.** A Study of Missions in Japan. By Rev. W. E. Griffis, D. D.

**Christus Liberator.** A Study of Missions in Africa. By Ellen C. Parsons, M.A.





Princeton Theological Seminary Libraries



1 1012 01234 8399



